WAIT, WHAT! HOW MANY I'M MARRYING?

By: vanquish356

Having grown up with seven sisters, Jaune could confidently say nothing could surprise him. And that he is ready for whatever crazy twist life might send his way. However, that all changed when he received a letter from Vale's City Clerk office. Inside it were multiple marriage contracts that his parents had made long ago. And he is going to meet them soon. Oum, help him.

Status: ongoing

Published: 2023-05-22

Updated: 2023-07-26

Words: 110463

Chapters: 13

Rated: Fiction T - Language: English - Characters: Jaune A. - Reviews: 106 - Favs: 339 - Follows: 428

Original source: https://www.fanfiction.net/s/14235595/1/WAIT-WHAT-HOW-MANY-I-M-MARRYING

Exported with the assistance of FicHub.net

WAIT, WHAT! HOW MANY I'M MARRYING?

Introduction
Chapter 1
Chapter 2
Chapter 3
Chapter 4
Chapter 5
Chapter 6
Chapter 7
Chapter 8
Chapter 9
Chapter 10
Chapter 11
Chapter 12
Chapter 13

Chapter 1

WAIT, WHAT! HOW MANY I'M MARRYING!?

"Alright. Alright. Are we sure we can't talk you out of this? I mean, you know others are also involved in this." A lady with blond hair and blue eyes asked with desperation evident in her voice.

'Yes. We're sure. And we know. You're not talking us out of this. This is happening.' The voice on the other end of the call answered. ***'There is no better person in Remnant for this.'***

"Are you sure-sure? I mean, even some of the others said their personalities don't mix well." A male with blond hair and blue eyes asked.

'And yet, they still want this to happen. I know we're not the first you called, and we won't be the last. I can say with utmost certainty that everyones' answer will be the same. They want this to happen. And so do we. We all signed the contracts and agreed that this would occur once everyone turned of age.'

"We know." The lady and man dejectedly said as they wished they could go back in time and stop this from happening. Or, at the very least, reduce the number to single digits.

'Good. And besides, I'm sure they will get along great once they meet. Anyway, I have to go now. I still have to tell her about this arrangement. And you probably do so with him as well. It would be best if you told him rather than hearing it from the others. And I'm sure the others are doing the same now. Take care.'

Click

"I can't believe this is happening, Jett." The lady said.

"I know, Aurelia. But we can't blame anyone else. We only have ourselves to blame. Ourselves and our drinking habits." Jett said.

"I really wished we stopped drinking a long time ago. Cause if we did, this wouldn't be happening." Aurelia said.

"I know. I feel the same. But there's nothing we can do about that now. All we can do now is get ready and tell him."

"Should we tell his sisters?"

"Not yet. You know how our daughters are. Three of them will just make things more complicated. Another three will make a scene considering how protective they are of their brother. And the last one will tease him to no end."

"Well, it's nice to know that one of our daughters definitely takes after me." Aurelia chuckled. "I wonder if our grandchild will take after her or her wife."

"Well, considering how things are going, I think he will take after our daughter-in-law." Jett said, chuckling. However, both of them went quiet for a while.

"Do you think he will forgive us for putting him into this situation?" Aurelia asked, worried.

"I want to say yes since our son doesn't hold grudges. But at the same time, this is something else. Something that hasn't happened before that will change his life forever." Jett said, rubbing his face. "I just hope he can forgive us down the road for this."

"I hope so too. But I wouldn't blame him if he doesn't."

"Do you think he will get along with the others?"

"I want to say yes, considering I raised him to be a gentleman. But we don't know how the others are. Some of their parents even said their children can be a bit... much at times."

"Right. Well, we should probably get ready to tell him. And then we should start making preparations since everyone has different versions of this ceremony."

"You're right. I'm not looking forward to this." Aurelia said as they got up and headed to the kitchen.

Meanwhile

Beacon Academy

Team JNPR's Dorm

'How were your finals, bro?' A voice asked over the scroll as the sole person inside the dorm continuously moved about the room.

"It wasn't finals, Saphron. It was mid-terms. And they were exhausting." Jaune Arc answered as he moved to grab a few gifts from the closet before placing them in the box.

It was the final day of Mid-Terms week at Beacon Academy. And most students were getting ready for the week-long vacation. Thankfully, despite what many might claim, the faculty weren't evil. They knew the students would be exhausted, so they made Fridays of Mid-Terms have no classes. This meant that students had a few more days to unwind. However, while most would be heading home or going on vacation, Jaune decided to remain at Beacon. And the reason was two-fold. The first was that his friends would also be staying or returning after a few days. And he wanted to spend some time with them. The second reason Jaune chose to stay was that his family was in Vale, and they were only an hour-long bus ride away. But that didn't mean he couldn't send some things to his family.

'You know, I'm still surprised how similar Huntsmen schools are to regular schools. At least in the structure of education.' Saphron said.

"Yeah, I was surprised too. But regular subjects like Social Studies only cover the basics since they put most of their focus into Dust and Combat classes." Jaune said as he placed a few stuffed animals for Adrian as a birthday gift.

'That doesn't surprise me. But at least you're getting something.'

"True. But we would be getting more if it wasn't for the council."

'Yeah, unfortunately. But anyway. Are you still going to come for Adrian's birthday?'

"Of course. I wouldn't miss my nephew's birthday. Speaking of which, I'm placing the gifts in the box I'm sending you. Can you wrap them for me?"

'Sure. I got some spare wrapping paper here. Is there anything fragile?'

"No. But there are two gifts that have multiple pieces. But it's still in the box, so you don't have to worry about any parts missing." Jaune said as he placed a few items to protect the toys.

'Alright. Thankfully, Adrian isn't as destructive as you were when you were a baby.'

"Hey, don't leave yourself out, Saph. You didn't leave your destructive phase until I was five."

'Anyway.' Saphron said. And despite them talking over the scroll, Jaune could tell she was rolling her eyes. ***'How's life at Beacon? And how different is it compared to back home?'***

"It's fine, not as chaotic as back home. But it's equally as dangerous. Although, the headmistress, Glynda Goodwitch, does remind me of Mom when she gets angry."

'Is she as scary?'

"No, but close."

'Well, if the rumors are true, her scariness and anger are warranted. She does have to manage an entire school filled with children wilding weapons basically by herself. But like mom, in the end, she is only watching out for everyone and ensuring they are prepared for their future career as huntsmen.'

"True." Jaune said as he closed the box and began the arduous process of tying the box so the contents wouldn't spill during travel.

'But since we are on the topic of Beacon.' Saphron said in a tone that Jaune knew all too well. It was the same tone she used when she was going to tease him relentlessly.

'Oh, no.' Jaune thought while mentally preparing himself.

'When are we going to meet your special someone, lil bro?'

"I'm not seeing anyone." Jaune sighed.

'Oh, don't give me that. Wait. Are you still using Dad's terrible advice?'

"No. I stopped doing that a month after coming here."

'Good, 'cause we all know how long it took for Mom to clue him in. But still. You have to tell me if you're seeing someone. I need to be able to embarrass you in front of your special someone. It's a cardinal sin if an older sister doesn't do that to her little brother.'

"No, Saphron. I'm still single and not in a relationship with anyone."

'Oh, pooh. That's too bad. Hopefully, that will change soon. I know you will make a fantastic boyfriend to whichever lucky girl gets in a relationship with you.'

"Thanks, Saphron." Jaune said, smiling as he finished tying the box.

'You're welcome, Jaune. But also, where is the rest of your team? I don't hear the usual destruction that comes with your teammates.'

"Oh, I'm the only one in the dorm. Ren is in Professor Peach's class for extra credit even though I'm pretty sure he has an A in the class."

'Well, extra credit is never bad. But what about your two female teammates?'

"Pyrrha and Nora are in Vale at the moment. They're grabbing some supplies for movie night."

'Oh, movie night. That's always nice. Well, it was nice talking with you, lil bro. But I have to go now. I need to start making lunch for Adrian and Terra once she gets home.'

"Okay. See you, Saphron." Jaune said as he ended the call. "Oh, I'm so glad Terra got a better job."

Smiling, Jaune grabbed a black marker from his desk before writing out the address on the box. Then, with a bit of a struggle, he placed it on the moving dolly before pushing it out of the dorm and closing the door. But before he could lock it, Jaune nearly jumped when he felt someone tap his shoulder. However, he quickly calmed down when he recognized the voice. And the nickname.

"Hey, Vomit Boy." Yang said as Jaune turned around.

"Hey, Yang. How's it yanging?" Jaune asked, earning an eye roll from his friend.

"Not bad. But puns are my schtick, Arc." Yang said. "Anyway, everything's going fine. I just woke up from my nap. Exams got me tired. They were brutal."

"That's an understatement. I don't think anyone expected them to be this brutal." Jaune said.

"True. I'm pretty sure I even saw Snow Queen struggling with some questions and down an entire pot of coffee to stay awake." Yang said before pointing to the box. "Anyway. What's in the box?"

"Just some stuff I'm sending to my family. And some presents for my nephew."

"I didn't know you were an uncle, Jaune. How old is he?"

"Yeah, it never came up. And Adrian is turning five this Wednesday."

"Wow. He's becoming a big boy."

"He is. And he's becoming a handful."

"I can imagine. And if half of the stories you told us about your family are true, then I'm slightly worried for his parents."

"I'm worried for them too. But I'm sure they can handle it."

"Hopefully. Anyway. Want some help with the box?"

"Sure. Thanks, Yang."

"No, problem. The mailroom, right?"

"Yup, the mailroom." Jaune answered as they started making their way there.

Meanwhile

In Vale

"Alright. Is that everything on the list?" Pyrrha asked as she and Nora headed to the bullheads.

"Yeah. I think so." Nora said as she looked over the list. "We got everything... except for the food."

"Wait. I thought we had the food already." Pyrrha said, confused, while lifting the bag with snacks and drinks.

"Snacks, yes. But we still need to get the main course, so to speak, like pizza."

"I think we should get something else. We had pizza the last few times."

"True. What do you think we should get?"

"Tacos?"

"Nah. But maybe next time. How about chicken wings?"

"Maybe, but we could choose that if we can't settle on anything else. How about nachos?"

"What kind?"

"Mistral Pita Nachos?" Pyrrha suggested.

"Sure. That sounds good. But where should we get it?" Nora asked.

"I know this place that makes some good nachos. Follow me." Pyrrha answered before running off, with Nora quickly following.

Five Minutes Later

"Alright. We're here." Pyrrha said as they stopped in front of a restaurant.

"Blazkowicz's Afterlife Grill?" Nora asked, confused. "When did this place open?"

"Last month. Jaune and I came here a few times, and the food blew away our expectations." Pyrrha answered before handing Nora her bags. "Wait here. I'll go inside and order. It might look big on the inside, but in reality, it's really cramped."

"Alright." Nora said as Pyrrha entered the restaurant.

Grabbing the bags, Nora placed them on the nearby bench before sitting down next to them. She then began looking around at all the shops to pass the time. However, one quickly caught her attention. It was a beauty shop. Getting up, Nora crossed the street and looked at the display items. While never one for makeup, Nora always did light touch-ups when it came to events like the Beacon Dance. However, this time, it was different.

"Hmm. I wonder which one Jauney will like more." Nora said as she looked over some of the perfumes.

She didn't know exactly when it began, but Nora found herself crushing on her leader, Jaune. And, like Pyrrha, she had been dropping hints every chance she had. But also, like Pyrrha, Jaune failed to pick up on any. However, that didn't mean she wasn't going to give up. She was only going to change up tactics.

"Maybe a fruity-smelling perfume. I remember Jaune saying he used to like that scent. And maybe I can get a campfire-smelling perfume for Pyrrha. Jaune did say he loves the scent as it reminded him of home."

Typically, most wouldn't help someone else that is crushing on the same person they are crushing on. However, Nora was different. She honestly didn't mind sharing Jaune with Pyrrha. And she knew Pyrrha felt the same, even though she wouldn't admit it out loud. While this kind of relationship would be unconventional, Nora knew they could make it work. However, first things first. They had to clue in their goofy knight.

'Better make this quick.' Nora thought as she entered the store.

Five Minutes Later

'Alright. I'll give this to Pyrrha when we get back to Beacon.' Nora thought as she placed the perfumes in the bags. And just in time as

the restaurant's doors opened a second later.

"Okay. I'm back. Sorry for the wait, but it was packed." Pyrrha said as she exited the restaurant while carrying the food.

"Alright. Let's get going." Nora said as they headed to the bullheads.

Meanwhile

Beacon's Mailroom

"And here's the receipt." The employee said as he handed Jaune the papers.

"Thanks." Jaune said as the employee left. He then turned toward Yang. "And thanks for the help, Yang."

"No, problem, Jaune." Yang said. "Now, if you will excuse me, I need to get the mail for my team."

"Same." Jaune said as they went to the counter.

"Names." The employee behind the counter said.

"Yang Xiao Long of Team Rwby. Picking up mail for all teammates." Yang said.

"Jaune Arc of Team JNPR. I'm also picking up the mail for the rest of my team." Jaune said.

"Okay. Team Rwby. And Team JNPR. Ah, here you both are." The employee said as he found the names on the computer. He then grabbed their mail and handed it to them. "Here you go. Have a nice day."

"Thanks." Jaune and Yang said as they exited the mailroom and headed back to their dorms.

Five Minutes Later

"See you later, Jaune." Yang said as they arrived at their dorms.

"Will you still be coming over for movie night?" Jaune asked.

"Obviously. Although, Weiss might be a bit late. She said she's expecting a call from her mother and sister later."

"That's fine. See you later, Yang." Jaune said as he entered the dorm.

Sighing, Jaune went over to his bed and set the mail before going to the bathroom for a quick shower. After about ten minutes, he came out in a new set of clothes. Jaune then grabbed a bottle of water and took a sip from it before sitting on his bed beside the mail. He began sorting out the mail and putting them on his teammates' beds. However, Jaune became confused when he looked through his mail. While most of it was junk mail or reminders of some clubs, he was part of, the last one was... weird. It was from Vale's City Clerk office, and it was pretty thick and heavy.

"Weird." Jaune said.

Grabbing his letter opener, Jaune opened it and pulled out a stack of paper. But his confusion only increased when he realized each sheet was a marriage contract/certificate. However, his confusion turned to worry and horror when he realized it wasn't a prank. Each one was legitimate with a seal of authenticity. And his name was on the side for the groom. And while some names on the bride's side he recognized, the rest he had never seen or heard before. Moreover, what nearly sent him over the edge was that there was a different name on each contract/certificate. In total, there were eighteen different names.

"W-what? T-this has to be a prank. Y-yeah. A prank. Maybe Esmerelda forged them. She was always good at that. I-I s-should probably find a way to get her back. Yeah. It was a good prank." Jaune said to himself, trying to make sense of the situation.

But that all changed when he noticed something on the bottom of each contract/certificate. Beneath everything, there were four signatures. While Jaune didn't recognize two of them, he knew the other two. After all, they belonged to the people that raised him. Grabbing his scroll, he quickly dialed his home phone. And after a few seconds, they finally picked up.

'Hello, sweetie. How have you been? And what's with the sudden call?' Aurelia asked in a sweet-sounding voice. But Jaune instantly saw through it. He knew his mother was nervous about something.

'We weren't expecting a call from you until tomorrow or the day after.' Jett added in a tone that Jaune instantly recognized. It was the same one his father used when he was trying to hide something.

"Yeah, I planned on calling you guys tomorrow. But something came up. Something weird." Jaune said.

'And what's that, son?'

"I got the mail for my team, and there was this strange letter from Vale's City Clerk office."

'Really? That's odd. What was in it?' Aurelia asked.

"Well, according to what was inside, I am now married."

'Married? To who?' Jett asked.

"Well, I can't say who."

'Why not?' Aurelia asked.

"It's not that I can't tell you. It's because I'm not married to one person. I am married to a total of eighteen people."

'Eighteen! This has to be a mistake. Maybe Esmeralda is playing a prank on you again.' Jett suggested.

"I thought so too. That is until I saw something on the bottom."

'And w-what's that, dear?' Aurelia asked.

"It was your guys' signatures. And I know it was you two and not Esmeralda because her penmanship is pretty bad. And you guys write in a very fine cursive." Jaune explained. "So, tell me. What is happening? What's going on?"

'Well, son. We have something to tell you. Something we are not proud that we did.' Jett said.

'And before you say anything, we tried to annul these contracts. But to do so required both parties' consent. And well, they said no to canceling it.' Aurelia added.

"What's going on?" Jaune nervously asked.

'Jaune. There's no easy way to say this. So, I'm just going to say it.' Jett said before sighing. ***'Those contracts are real. You are getting married to all of them in an arranged marriage. And it's going to happen soon.'***

Chapter 2

WAIT, WHAT! HOW MANY I'M MARRYING!?

Chapter 2

"WHAT!?" Jaune shouted, shocked.

'You're getting married, Jaune. All those contracts are valid. And the names on them are the names of those that you will be marrying.' Aurelia said.

"Why didn't you tell me this before?"

'Honestly, we don't have a good excuse, Jaune. We forgot about this for a long time. But as soon as we remember them, we try every way to void them without needing the other parties' consent. But nothing came up. Then we looked everywhere to get in contact with them. Yet, as we just said, they want this to happen. And to void the contract, we need both parties' consent.' Jett answered.

"When did it happen?" Jaune asked. "When did you sign the contract?"

'Over a decade ago. I believe you were around six or seven.'

"So... during your drinking years?"

'Unfortunately.' Aurelia answered.

"Figures." Jaune said. *'I wonder if Ruby's Uncle and my parents know each other.'*

'We're so sorry, Jaune.' Jett said.

"I know."

'Are you mad or upset with us?' Aurelia asked.

"No, I'm not. It's just- I'm just-"

'You're having a hard time processing this.' Jett said.

"Yeah."

'That's understandable. It's something that has never happened before in Remnant.'

"I can imagine. But this really complicates things."

'It does. But we're here for you, honey.' Aurelia assured.

"Thanks, guys. When is the wedding supposed to take place?"

'Well, there are different dates. And that's because most of the families have different wedding traditions. But the earliest wedding date will be in about four months, which will land us in February.' Jett answered.

"FEBRUARY! THAT'S SO CLOSE! WHY DID YOU WAIT UNTIL NOW!?" Jaune shouted.

'Ah, that's not our fault, Jaune. That's the fault of Vale's City Clerk's Office.' Aurelia said.

'She's right, son. We wanted them to send it out much earlier. But it seems like they only now decided to send the letter.' Jett added.

"Do we have a date of when I'm going to meet my future wives?"

'Not yet. After we're done, we're going to call the others and let them know that you now know about the marriage. And once we have the dates, we'll text them to you.' Aurelia answered, causing Jaune to sigh.

"I'm going to have to call you guys back. This. This is just too much for me to handle at the moment." Jaune said.

'Alright, dear.' Aurelia said.

'Are you still going to come visit us during your break?' Jett asked.

"Of course. And I'm going to visit when it's Adrian's birthday. Oh, speaking of which, I just sent the box home. And in it are my gifts for Adrian." Jaune answered, smiling. But it soon left as his mind instantly returned to the marriage contracts.

'Okay. Talk to you later, son.' Jett said.

'See you soon, dear.' Aurelia added before ending the call. But as soon as it did, Jaune placed it next to him before putting his face in his hands.

"What am I going to do? This is just... too much." Jaune said with a sigh.

Clenching and unclenching his fists, Jaune pondered what he should do next. Typically, when he was in a puzzling situation, he would always seek out advice from someone that has experience so they could share their insight. But, while there have been and still are arranged marriages, they generally consist of only one bride and one groom. They did not consist of EIGHTEEN future wives. So, Jaune highly doubted there was someone that could give him some much-needed guidance. Not only that, but his experience when it came to *DATING,* which is something that happens *before* marriage, is basically non-existent. So to say he was clueless and in the dark would be a severe understatement.

"What should I do? First things first, I should probably get a job to pay for the future expenses that will surely come my way." Jaune said, rubbing his face.

"What expenses?" A voice asked, startling Jaune.

"Oh, hey, Ren." Jaune said, turning to his teammate as he closed the door. "How was class?"

"Tough, but alright." Ren said as he placed his books on his desk. "But you still have to tell me what expenses."

"Well... Um... It's... Uh... I'm going too... um." Jaune stuttered, unsure of how to tell Ren.

"Is everything okay, Jaune?" Ren asked, worried for his friend.

'Might as well. I can trust Ren after all.' Jaune thought with a sigh. "Ren."

"Yes?"

"You know what an arranged marriage is, right?"

"Yes, of course. An arranged marriage is when two families agree to marry their children to each other." Ren answered before realization dawned on him. "Wait. Why?"

"Something happened. Something my parents did a long time ago during... their... more adventurous years. And it's something that I only just learned."

"Don't tell me. Your parents put you in an arranged contract?" Ren asked, now worried. While he couldn't speak for all of them, Ren knew that most arranged marriages weren't happy ones. And he didn't want to see his best friend in one. But also, Ren knew of Pyrrha's and Nora's crush on Jaune. And he didn't want to see them possibly have a breakdown at seeing their crush being married off to someone else.

"Yes."

"Do you know who you are getting married to?"

"I can't say who."

"Why not?" Ren asked, confused. "Or do you not know her name?"

"Oh, no. I know their names."

"Names? Don't you mean "name" as is in the singular form?"

"No. Names. I'm in an arranged marriage with EIGHTEEN different girls." Jaune said, lifting the stack of contracts. Ren was undoubtedly shocked at hearing that his friend was going to marry eighteen people. At first, he thought Jaune was simply playing a joke on him. But that changed when he saw the official stamp on the top paper. And as such, he made the only appropriate response.

He laughed his ass off.

"It's not funny, Ren." Jaune said, slightly annoyed.

"Sorry, Jaune. But it kind of is." Ren said, calming down. "And you are either the luckiest or unluckiest man on the face of Remnant."

"For everyone else, maybe. But not for me. And I feel like it's leaning toward the latter."

"Kind of like when you hit your funny bone."

"Sort of."

"So, what are their names, and do you know any of them?" Ren asked, finally calm.

"I knew a few of them. But the others I never heard of." Jaune said.

"Tell me then. I might know one or two of them."

"Alright." Jaune said as he grabbed the papers. "The first name is Arslan Altan."

"Okay. I don't know her."

"Next is Blake."

"Blake?" Ren asked, surprised. "Blake from Team Rwby?"

"Apparently."

"Well, get ready to possibly have your eyes clawed out."

"Remind me to get some painkillers, eye patches, and eye drops."

"Will do. Who's next?"

"Ciel Soleil."

"I don't know her. But maybe Weiss does. I think I heard her say that name once before."

"Coco Adel."

"Get ready to run if that is the case."

"Yeah. I'm probably going to find a bunker in Atlas to try and escape her hail of bullets." Jaune said. "Emerald Sustrai."

"Don't know her."

"May Zedong."

"Don't know her."

"Melanie Malachite."

"The name rings a bell, but I'm not sure."

"Miltiades Malachite."

"Oh, now I remember. Those two are the bouncers from the... bar... Yang crashed."

"Oh, crap. This is going to be painful." Jaune said, feeling a shiver go down his spine.

"W-who's next?"

"Neon Katt."

"Again, Weiss might know."

"Next is someone called Trivia Vanille." Jaune said, almost messing up pronouncing the name. "I have no idea who she is."

"Me neither."

"Next is... oh."

"Who is next?"

"It's Nora. Nora from our team." Jaune answered, shocked.

"Okay. I was not expecting that." Ren said, equally shocked but also happy that Nora now can get together with her crush.

"Yeah. And next is also a shocker."

"Let me guess. Pyrrha?"

"Yup."

"At least you know them." Ren said, internally glad that his closest friends would finally be together. While he was still unsure of the others, Ren was grateful that the marriage wouldn't be entirely unhappy.

"True."

"Who's next?"

"Ruby Rose."

"That might get complicated. But at least you two are good friends."

"True. Next is Reese Chloris."

"Don't know her."

"Next is Velvet from Team CFVY."

"Do you want me to start planning your funeral for when Coco riddles you with bullets?" Ren asked, wincing as everyone knew how protective Coco was of her partner.

"Please." Jaune said, feeling the blood leave his face.

"Who's next?"

"Weiss."

"Yeah. After this, I'm going to check on our First Aid supplies."

"Next is... Winter Schnee."

"Your parents are trying to kill you at this point since that is Weiss's sister. And from what I overheard, she's a specialist in the Atlas Kingdom."

"I'm starting to think that."

"Who's the last one?"

"It's Yang."

"Okay. I just have one question." Ren said.

"What is it?"

"How do your parents know all of them?"

"I have no idea. And because I want to remain somewhat sane, I'm not even going to question it."

"Good idea. But this is what you meant by the expenses, right?"

"Yup."

"Well, all I can say is good luck."

"Thanks, Ren." Jaune said, rolling his eyes.

"But do you know anything else about this? Like when the weddings are or if you are even going to meet them beforehand?"

"My parents said they'll text me once they have the dates of when I will meet the others. But that reminds me, I should probably tell them I already know some of them." Jaune said, grabbing his scroll and texting his parents.

"And the weddings?"

"It will be spread out over a while. But the earliest one is in February."

"February? That's only four months away."

"Yup. That's what I told my parents."

"You have so little time to get ready."

"Unfortunately. I should probably start looking for a job tomorrow since it's already late." Jaune said, rubbing his forehead.

"If you want, I can't help you find one. I think I saw a few shops that are hiring. While they might not pay much, they are flexible with their schedules. They should hold over until you find a better-paying job."

"Thanks, Ren." Jaune said, smiling.

"No problem, Jaune." Ren said as he stood up from his bed. "Now. How about we stop thinking about your arranged marriage for now? We can go over it and figure out what you should do tomorrow when we both have a clear mind. But for now, let's get ready for the movie night. Nora and Pyrrha should be here soon. And Team Rwby should also be here soon."

"Right. We better get ready." Jaune said, getting up and putting the contracts in his desk drawer.

"Also. Quick question."

"Yes?"

"Do you think any of the others know about it?"

"Considering how I am still in one piece, I'm going to say no."

"Well. Let's just hope they are understanding and acknowledge that you didn't know about these arranged marriages either."

"Let's hope." Jaune said, still worried.

Meanwhile

In the Bullheads flying to Beacon

"Okay. So what movies do you think we will be watching?" Pyrrha asked, still surprised they were the only ones on the bullhead aside from the pilots.

"I know the first movie is Secret Obsession. The second is a movie called 12 Angry Men. But I'm not sure what movies Team Rwby picked." Nora answered.

"Hopefully, it's a romantic movie or something similar." Pyrrha said, looking forward to having an excuse to laying her head on her

crush's shoulders and possibly hold his hand.

"Speaking of which. I got something to help us." Nora said, digging through one of the bags.

"What did you get, Nora? And what's it supposed to help us with?" Pyrrha asked, confused and curious.

"Oh, you know, Pyrrha. Getting our Jauney's attention and asking him out."

"W-what are y-you talking about?" Pyrrha asked with a blush on her face.

"Oh, come on, Pyrrha. We all know about your crush on our fearless leader. And you're not alone."

"What do you mean not alone?"

"You're not the only one with a crush on Jauney. And don't worry. I'm not going to steal him from you. We're going to share our fearless leader." Nora said with a wink.

"WHAT!?" Pyrrha asked, shocked. But being honest with herself, Pyrrha wasn't surprised that Nora was also crushing on Jaune. There was just something so charming about the goofy knight. And while she was nervous for a second about Nora getting Jaune before her, she was internally relieved that wouldn't be the case. And, being honest again, Pyrrha wouldn't mind sharing Jaune with Nora. Not that she would say that out loud where everyone could hear her. However, that left one question. "Do you think Jaune would even be open to that kind of relationship?"

"I'm sure. Jaune is very open-minded. But I think we should take it slow so we don't overwhelm him, considering he hasn't been in a relationship before, which is honestly shocking. "

"True." Pyrrha agreed, happy that she didn't have to compete with her friend and now had an ally. "But what did you get that would help us?"

"I got us some perfume. I got a Fruity-Smelling one for me and a Campfire-Smelling one for you." Nora answered as she gave Pyrrha the Campfire-smelling perfume.

"Why these ones?"

"I remember Jaune always loving those scents whenever we went to the mall. And the Campfire one is because Jaune said the scent always reminded him of home."

"Right. Good thinking, Nora." Pyrrha said.

"Thanks."

"But what should we do next? And should we use them later during the movies?"

"I think we can use them. But I don't think we should make a move until tomorrow or the weekend. We're all pretty tired from Mid-Terms."

"True. Those were brutal."

"Attention passengers. We're about ten minutes away from Beacon. Gather your belongings, as we will be landing shortly." The pilot announced over the intercoms.

"Wow. That was quick." Nora said before standing up. "Can you watch the bags, Pyrrha? I need to use the bathroom."

"Sure." Pyrrha answered.

"Thanks. I'll be right back." Nora said before running to the bathroom.

"Well, this was certainly a turn of events. But I'm not complaining." Pyrrha said. While it would be unconventional, she knew they could make it work. And the thought of finally being together with the love of her life sent her heart racing. But the sound of her scroll ringing snapped Pyrrha from her thoughts. Taking it out, she smiled when she realized her mom was calling. "MOM!"

'Hi, sweety.' Pyrrha's mother, Athena, said as her image appeared on the scroll's screen. ***'How are you doing?'***

"I'm doing great. How about you?"

'I'm doing well. It's a little lonely here. But hopefully, that might change in the future.' Athena said.

"Of course, it will change. I'm going to visit as soon as I can."

'I would love that. What are you doing now?'

"I'm with my friend, Nora. We're heading back to Beacon. We were in Vale getting some supplies for our team's movie night. It became a sort of weekly tradition for us to unwind. Although we typically do it on Fridays, we decided today because Mid-Terms just finished, and they were tough."

'I can imagine. I remember struggling to get through them when I was still in school.' Athena said with a giggle. ' ***Anyway. I'm so glad you made some friends.'***

"I'm glad too. They're great friends. I'm really grateful I met them." Pyrrha said, pondering if she should tell her mom about her crush on Jaune. However, she became confused and curious when she noticed that her mother seemed to be wanting to tell her something. "Mom, is something wrong? You seem like you want to tell me something."

'Yes, sweety. But first, before I tell you, I need to ask you this. Do you remember all those fake dates your sponsors tried to

set you up on? And remember how they tried to make you get together with those fake suitors?'

"Of course. I hate those times. But I'm glad you managed to bail me out." Pyrrha said, loathing how her sponsors attempted all that. "But what does that have to do with anything?"

'Well, a lot, actually. You see, your sponsors were looking into ways to solidify a relationship with someone without needing your or our consent. And saying those 'suitors' were terrible would be a severe understatement. So, your father and I decided to do something about it.'

"What did you guys do?" Pyrrha nervously asked.

'We got into contact with some old friends that we trust. *Sigh* Pyrrha, we didn't want you to be in an unhappy and possibly abusive relationship. So we put you into an arranged marriage with their son. And we chose them because we know how they raised their children. And while we're not sure if it would be a loving marriage, we're confident it would be a safe and kind one.'

'Why?' Pyrrha thought, struggling to hold back her tears. "What's the name of the family and their son I'm marrying?"

'His name is Jaune Arc.' Athena answered. But as soon as she said this, Pyrrha's whole world froze.

"Wait. Arc. As in Jaune Arc?" Pyrrha asked.

'Yes. His name is Jaune Arc, and he comes from the Arc Family.'

"You mean-" Pyrrha began, quickly looking through her scrolls images before pulling up a photo of her and Jaune when they were eating at the Ramen shop. "You're talking about this Jaune Arc, right?"

'Yes, dear. That's him.' Athena answered. ***'Wait. How do you have a photo of him?'***

"Mom. He's on my team. Jaune is the leader of my team and my partner."

'That's good. So you know him already. Is he nice?'

"More than that, mom. While I prefer to tell you all of it in person, I tell you this. I have a crush on Jaune. It might be a little early to say this, but I think he is the love of my life." Pyrrha said, feeling happier than she had ever been before.

'That's great, dear. I'm so relieved that we picked him now. And I'm sure wherever your dad is now is also smiling and relieved.' Athena said, sighing in relief.

"Does Jaune know about this?"

'I'm not sure. But his parents should probably be telling him later today or early tomorrow.' Athena answered. ***'But... there is something else I need to tell you.'***

"What's that?" Pyrrha asked, curious.

'We're not the only ones that came to the Arc Family for an arranged marriage. While I'm not sure if the total has increased since the last time I checked, there are seventeen other families that want their daughters to marry him. I hope you're willing to share him, sweetie, because it's happening.'

"While not ideal." Pyrrha began, unsure if she should tell her mother about her and Nora's goal. "I think I'm willing to share Jaune with the others. And I'd stick to his side if the others aren't... friendly."

'Thank you, dear. I'm so proud of you. And I know your father is too. Well, I have to go now. I need to finish making preparations for the wedding ceremony. Take care. I'll also be sending you

more information about the marriage and dates later. Oh, and before I hang up.'

"What is it?"

'I do hope to see grandkids in the near future. Bye, Pyrrha.' Athena said before hanging up while Pyrrha blushed fiercely. But after a moment, she stood up.

"YES!" Pyrrha cheered. "I can't believe this is happening!"

"What is happening?" Nora asked as she returned. Pyrrha turned to her and noticed that she was also smiling.

"Something amazing just happened. Well, it started off badly but became great a second later. I have great news."

"Well, I also have amazing news." Nora said. "You go first."

"My mother called me. It started like any of our conversations. But she then told me that she and my father put me into an arranged marriage. At first, I was devastated. That is until they told me who it was."

"Who are they making you marry?"

"Jaune. Jaune Arc. They put me into an arranged marriage with Jaune Arc. That means I'm going to marry the love of my life!" Pyrrha said, barely able to contain her excitement.

"Really! That's great!" Nora said as she and Pyrrha hugged each other.

"IT IS! But what's your news?" Pyrrha asked.

"Ironically, it's the same as yours. My parents called me and told me they put me into an arranged marriage a long time ago. And just like you, I was upset they did this. But also, like you, I became excited

when I learned they're making me marry Jaune." Nora answered as they let go of each other.

"Oh, my, Oum. Imagine the odds."

"I know, right?" Nora said as they felt the bullhead touch down.

"Yeah. I never expected this to happen."

"I don't think anyone, especially us or Jaune, could have expected this."

"But speaking of that." Pyrrha said as they grabbed the bags and exited the bullhead. "Did your parents tell you that we're not the only ones that are in an arranged marriage with Jaune?"

"Yes. They told me there were seventeen others. I know there's you now. So that means there are sixteen others."

"Do you think we know them?"

"I'm not sure." Nora answered. "But still. Jaune has to be the luckiest person on Remnant."

"I'm not sure he would think the same." Pyrrha said, chuckling.

"When should we bring this up with him?"

"Maybe tomorrow or the weekend. He's probably going to freak out."

"Yeah, I wouldn't blame him. But when he does, we'll be there to help him get better." Nora said. "Anyway. We should probably hurry. Jaune and the others are probably getting worried."

"Right." Pyrrha said as they raced to their dorm.

Two Hours Later

'Hey, listen, Snow. You stick to the plan. You better do your job, or I'll hit you with a Sherman Tank. Got that?'

'A Sherman Tank? Toss my caber, Langral. I got other things to do.'

"What was the name of this movie again?" Blake asked.

"It's called Lockout." Yang answered.

"Well, while I'm not particularly fond of these kinds of movies." Weiss began. "I have to admit. Its plot is a nice break away from the same, generic plots other movies follow."

"But you do have to admit. Snow's sarcasm and jabs are on another level." Blake said.

"What do you think, Jaune?" Pyrrha asked, leaning into him.

"Uh..." Jaune said, struggling to think of something to say. "It's a great movie."

"While I prefer movies with more explosions or romantic movies in general, this is still nice." Nora said, laying her head on Jaune's shoulder.

"Yeah." Jaune said, blushing.

But internally, Jaune felt a whirlwind of emotions inside him. Here were two of his future wives, leaning into him like they were already dating or married. And how they were doing it caused him to blush red like a tomato. Not to mention, there was the scent of their new perfumes. One smell reminded him of the fruity smoothies and drinks his mother used to make when he was younger. And the other brought up the times when he and his sisters used to go out camping behind their house and made campfires. However, a question kept bouncing around his mind.

How did he feel about Nora and Pyrrha?

Yes, Jaune did like them. And he did care for them. He would help them with whatever they needed. But did he love them? Perhaps he could find out if they went out on a date. But should he do that?

'Maybe I should give it a chance? Who knows what will happen? Maybe I will find out I do love them, and I just haven't realized it yet?' Jaune thought, still blushing as Nora and Pyrrha snuggled into him.

However, the knowledge that Jaune would be marrying his friends and others he didn't know weighed heavily on his mind. And he didn't know if their parents told them yet. Jaune just hoped they could remain friends afterward. Although, he was still nervous about the others he didn't know. But Jaune knew worrying about it wouldn't do anything. He just had to hope for the best and prepare for the worst.

'I just hope everything works out alright.' Jaune thought as he focused back on the movie. As Ren told him earlier, it would be better to think of what he should do next with a fresh mind. And it would be easier to think when Pyrrha and Nora weren't leaning into him so much. Letting out a breath, Jaune took a risk and grabbed their hands. They tensed a bit before relaxing and holding his hands tighter. Smiling, they enjoyed the moment, unaware of what was going to come in the coming days and all the hilarious and dangerous trouble that was coming Jaune's way.

Notes:

I initially planned on having this as a one-shot. But I'm not that evil to leave everyone guessing as to who they are, so I made this chapter.

I also had more people in mind to add to the arranged marriages, like Vernal and Dew, but had trouble coming up with somewhat sound reasons why their parents made the arranged marriage happen. This is also why Glynda and a few others aren't here, as it would make little sense for that to happen for reasons.

But if you all want me to continue this, I will. And if that happens, what should be the order be for in which Jaune meets his future wives?

Chapter 3

WAIT, WHAT! HOW MANY I'M MARRYING!?

Chapter 3: And so it begins.

Part 1: Nora

"Okay. That was a decent movie." Ruby said as the movie finished.

"Not the best, but better than other generic ones. And I like how it used a different plot instead of the same one others use." Blake said.

"But we should probably head to sleep now." Weiss said through a yawn.

"Yeah. It's late." Yang said after checking the time on her scroll and seeing it was past midnight.

"And we probably have a busy day tomorrow. And I'm not talking about classes." Ren said, earning confused looks from Team Rwby and a sigh from Jaune. But this also told Pyrrha and Nora that Jaune had learned about the arranged marriage. Yet, they still silently agreed to bring it up gently tomorrow. They knew Jaune was probably on edge still and didn't want to accidentally cause him to have a breakdown.

"Right. See you guys, tomorrow." Ruby said as she and the rest of her team returned to their dorm.

"We should probably get to sleep too." Jaune said as he got up. Although. as he did, Nora and Pyrrha got up with him while still holding his hands.

"Right. But uh. Are you three going to bed together?" Ren asked, smirking.

"Uh-" Jaune began, unsure of what to say.

"No." Pyrrha answered with a light blush on her face.

"Nope." Nora said before whispering. "But hopefully, soon."

"Alright. We'll see. Good night." Ren said, chuckling.

"Good night." Jaune said as Pyrrha and Nora let go of him.

"Good night, Jaune." Nora and Pyrrha said. However, to Jaune's shock, they kissed him on the cheek before heading to their beds.

"U-Uh." Jaune stuttered before clearing his throat. "Good night, you two."

"Good night." They said, giggling before getting into their beds.

Still blushing red like a tomato, Jaune quickly changed into his pajamas before getting into his bed, unaware of his two female companions watching him. Unfortunately, despite being tired both physically and mentally, he could not fall asleep. And it was all because of his racing mind. This whole thing had never happened before. Jaune had no idea what to do and who to turn to. But, more importantly, he did not want to ruin the other girls' lives. Even though he didn't know them, that doesn't mean he wanted to change their lives forever. What if they were already crushing on someone or in a relationship? Jaune couldn't live with himself if that happened.

'Perhaps I could divorce some of them right aft- No. That would never work.'

Despite having a significantly lower rate than traditional marriages, divorces still occur with arranged marriages. However, that can be a bit tricky. While it is possible, there is the chance that the others might face scrutiny and a negative stigma. And that was something Jaune didn't want to happen either. Also, he doubted a divorce could

happen in general as there might be something in the contracts that prevents one from happening.

'I wonder if there is a world record for how fast one's life can turn upside down.'

Sighing, Jaune figured that the best course of action going forward would be to make the best of it. Who knows, maybe the others are actually nice, and they could make the relationship/marriage work. But if that doesn't happen, hopefully, they could at least be on good terms or be friends instead of enemies.

'Better get to sleep, Jaune. You have a big day tomorrow. Not only do you have to tell Pyrrha and Nora, but you might also be taking them on a date tomorrow if they agree.' Jaune thought.

Breathing out, Jaune adjusted himself as he got into the position he always used when he had trouble falling asleep. Placing his hands on his stomach, he closed his eyes and started breathing slowly. However, as soon as sleep was about to take him, Jaune's eyes snapped open when he felt his bed creak. Looking down, Jaune blushed even fiercer than ever before when he realized that Pyrrha and Nora had slipped into his bed on either side of him and were now cuddling into him. Not wanting to disturb them, Jaune closed his eyes and didn't move, so he didn't wake them. Thankfully, sleep came to him not even a moment later.

Next Day

Eight A.M.

'At least there are no classes today.' Jaune thought with a yawn as the sunlight woke him up.

Stretching a bit, Jaune looked to his sides and was slightly relieved to see that Pyrrha and Nora were back in their beds. It wasn't that he didn't enjoy them being next to him as they slept; it was just that Jaune knew the ensuing conversation would be awkward.

"Morning, Jaune." Ren said as he exited the bathroom.

"Morning, Ren." Jaune said as he got up and gathered his clothes.

"Where are the others?"

"I-I'm not sure." Jaune answered after realizing Pyrrha and Nora weren't in their beds as he had initially assumed.

"When will you tell them?"

"After breakfast. Do you think you can give us some privacy when it happens?"

"Sure. But after that, what will you do?"

"Well, I thought of this last night-"

"When they were cuddling with you?" Ren asked with a smirk.

"Yes." Jaune answered, blushing.

"So what did you think of?"

"Well. It's a bit complicated. But, honestly, I like Pyrrha and Nora. But I'm not sure if I love them yet."

"So?" Ren asked, not following.

"I like them. A lot. But I'm not sure if I love them yet. Maybe I can figure out my feelings if we went on a date afterward. If they are willing, that is."

"So, what I am getting is that you care for them but are unsure if you love them. And you think going on a date with them might reveal your true feelings for them."

"It's more than just that, but that just about sums it up." Jaune said, rubbing his face.

"I think that is a good idea, especially since you're going to be married to them soon. Who knows, you might find out you do love them. And I'm pretty sure you already do, considering everything you've done for them and how you sometimes act around them. You just haven't realized it. But even if it doesn't work out or if you learn you just like them as friends, you will at least have your feelings sorted out. And you can remain friends."

"Hopefully." Jaune said as he stood up. "Anyway. We should probably get ready and head to the cafeteria for breakfast. Pyrrha and Nora are probably already there."

"Right." Ren agreed as he fixed his bed while Jaune entered the bathroom.

However, as soon as the door closed, Ren let out a sigh. He honestly never knew a person's life could get so complicated in the blink of an eye. And yet, the universe proved him wrong yesterday as Jaune was now in an arranged marriage with eighteen other girls. Thankfully, he knew some of them, with two already in love with him. And Ren knew without a doubt that Jaune loved them back. He just hasn't realized it but probably will once he goes on a date later with them. However, he was genuinely worried about the others. While some might begrudgingly accept the arrangement with a few conditions, others might be the complete opposite. Ren feared they might attack Jaune out of shock or blind rage despite him not knowing about the contracts and having no part of it. Not to mention, Jaune would also be marrying the Malachite twins, who were technically criminals. And that would bring a whole new set of problems to the table.

'I just hope Jaune comes out of this okay. But to be safe, I should head into town later and buy lots of medical supplies. I should also stop by Peach's office and ask her if she knows any home remedies for treating severe injuries.' Ren thought as he waited on his bed for Jaune.

"Okay. Ready?" Jaune asked as he exited the bathroom a few moments later.

"Yes." Ren answered as he stood up.

"Then let's go."

Ten Minutes Later

"There you guys are." Ruby said as she ate her 'breakfast.' And by breakfast, they mean cookies.

"Hey, Team Rwby." Jaune said as he and Ren sat down and started eating.

"Hey, you two." Yang said as she swallowed her food. "Where's the Pancake Queen and Cereal Girl?"

"Here we are." Pyrrha said as she and Nora appeared with their food.

"Where were you two?" Weiss asked as Nora and Pyrrha sat on either side of Jaune, causing him to blush.

"We just needed to talk about something that was going to change our lives." Nora answered.

"Is something wrong?" Jaune asked, worried.

"No. Nothing's wrong, Jaune." Pyrrha answered.

"In fact, everything is great. And the news is great too." Nora added.

"But it does involve you. We need to talk with you after we finish, Jaune. It's important."

"And I have to talk with you two as well. It's also important. And it's also life-changing." Jaune said, rubbing the back of his head. And

because of this, he missed the confused looks from Team Rwby and the smiles from Pyrrha and Nora.

"Sure." Pyrrha and Nora said, already knowing what Jaune wanted to talk about in a bit.

"Uh. Is everything alright, Jaune?" Ruby asked, confused and unaware that she would eventually be in a similar conversation.

"Ye-uh. It depends on how you look at it. Sorry, but it's- uh. It's personal." Jaune answered, remembering how he would be marrying all of Team Rwby soon. And he was not looking forward to dodging all of their attacks, especially from Yang.

"Alright. Just know that we're here in case you need our help, Jaune. We're friends, after all." Yang assured with a gentle smile.

'Hopefully, it stays like that.' Jaune mentally hoped.

"Anyway. What are everyone's plans for today since we don't have classes?" Ren asked.

"I'm going into town. There are a few things I need to get for Bumblebee." Yang answered.

"I also need to head into town to get some stuff for Zwei. I might as well take him with me to the park." Ruby answered.

"I'm going to take advantage of the quiet and finish some books I've been putting off." Blake answered before taking a sip of her coffee.

"And I need to finish getting ready. My mother asked me and my sister to meet with her in our vacation home in Mistral. Which is strange." Weiss answered.

"I'll say. Don't you have, like, special rooms for important meetings?" Yang asked.

"We do. But those are primarily for business meetings that Jacques Schnee hosts. We do have a few other rooms that we can use. But she still chose our vacation home, which is odd." Weiss answered before mumbling. "And yet, that's not even the strangest part."

"What is then?" Blake asked.

"Uh, sorry. It's a bit personal." Weiss said, more concerned than confused. While she might not have the best of relations with her mother, she still cared for her. And the main reason why their relationship was strained was due to her mother being an alcoholic and drunk most of the time. However, her mother was 100% sober during their call yesterday. And that sent up numerous red flags. And the serious tone in her voice raised even more.

"Alright."

"What about you, Ren?" Jaune asked.

"I need to talk with Professor Peach about a few things. Then I'll be heading into town to get a few things." Ren answered.

"And you, Jaune?" Ruby asked.

"Ah. That would entirely depend on what will happen after we discuss in a bit." Jaune answered as they finished their food.

"Do you want to discuss it now, Jaune?" Pyrrha asked.

"Sure."

"Alright. Let's go." Nora said as they cleaned up their trash.

"Good luck." Ren whispered as they left.

Five Minutes Later

"So, what did you two want to talk about?" Jaune asked as he closed and locked the door so no one could interrupt them.

"I think we should begin with what you have to tell us." Pyrrha said.

"Are you sure?"

"Yes. You should start, Jaune." Nora answered.

"Okay." Jaune said before moving to his desk, opening the drawer, and pulling out the contracts with Pyrrha's and Nora's names.

"What are those, Jaune?" Pyrrha asked despite knowing what they were.

"Uh. Before I answer that, I need to ask you two this." Jaune answered as he felt his heart racing. "Do you two know what an arranged marriage is?"

"Of course." Nora answered.

"It's when the parents make a contract and agree to have their children marry each other. It's not that common today, but it still happens. While I'm not sure about Vale or Vacuo, I know it happens the most in Mistal and Atlas." Pyrrha added while barely able to contain her growing excitement.

"Well. I'm not sure how to say it any other way, so I'll just tell you both directly." Jaune said, sighing before showing them the contracts. "Our parents put us into an arranged marriage, and these are the contracts."

Silence. That was the only thing that followed. For a moment, Jaune regretted not preparing for this moment. However, he became relieved, confused, and slightly worried when Pyrrha and Nora smiled. But confusion became the most prominent one by what they said next.

"We know." Pyrrha said, smiling.

"And before you ask, we're not mad." Nora added, now barely able to contain her excitement.

"Wait. Really?" Jaune asked, shocked.

"Yes." They answered.

"When did you find out?"

"Our parents called us yesterday and told us everything." Pyrrha answered.

"And the reason why we were out earlier was because they called us again because they wanted to send us something. And it's a copy of the arranged marriage contracts." Nora said as she and Pyrrha showed Jaune their scrolls. And on it was an image of the same marriage contracts Jaune has.

"Uh-uh." Jaune said, unsure of what to say or even how to respond to that as he was not expecting their responses. "A-are you sure you're not mad?"

"We're sure, Jaune." They answered while rolling their eyes. They expected their leader and crush to ask that, but they couldn't blame him.

"A-are your sure? I-I mean, this is a life-changing event. I-it will change our lives forever. A-and what if you m-meet someone and f-fall in-," Jaune began, even more unsure of what to say. But he stopped when Nora and Pyrrha placed their hands on his shoulders.

"Jaune. Please. Calm down." Pyrrha said with the gentle smile that Jaune always liked seeing.

"We're not mad, Jaune. And we know you're shocked. But please calm down, and we'll explain." Nora added. But it was a struggle to say that as her heart was racing a mile a minute.

"Okay." Jaune said as he tried his best to calm down. But as he did, he felt his cheeks heat up when Pyrrha and Nora wrapped their arms around his. "So?"

"Well. I think it would be better if we show you." Nora said while nodding to Pyrrha.

"How?"

"Like this." Pyrrha said before they both leaned in and kissed Jaune on his cheeks. But they made sure they kissed him right on the edges of his lips but not on them.

"Now, do you understand?" Nora asked as they moved back slightly.

"Y-yes." Jaune said, blushing even harder now. "But just to be sure if I got it. You two actually like me? As in more than friends?"

"Yes, Jaune. We do like you like that. While I'm not sure when Nora fell in love with you, I have been for a while." Pyrrha answered.

"She's right. I'm not sure when it started, but I did fall in love with you. We've also been dropping hints for a while, although you never picked up on any of them." Nora said.

"Sorry." Jaune sheepishly said.

"It's alright, Jaune. We should have been a bit more direct, considering you grew up with seven sisters and probably thought we were only being friendly." Pyrrha said, snuggling into him, enjoying the fact that Jaune now knew how they felt.

"But now comes an important question." Nora said. Her heart was racing again. But this time from fear and potential rejection. "How do you feel about us, Jaune?"

"I-I'm not sure, to be honest." Jaune said after a moment. "I mean. I like you both a lot, probably more than just friends. A lot more than just friends. I-it's just I'm not sure yet."

"That's understandable." Nora said, unsure of how to feel about Jaune's answer. While it was better than an outright rejection, it still didn't mean that Jaune returned her affections.

"It is, especially given the circumstances." Pyrrha said, feeling the same as Nora.

"But I feel like you have something else on your mind." Nora said, looking Jaune in the eyes. "Right?"

"Yes." Jaune answered.

"What is it?" Pyrrha asked, curious and hopeful.

"I do like you both a lot. But my feelings are a mess right now. I'm not sure how to feel at the moment, although that could be because of the contracts. That's why I want to take you both on a date... A-An actual date. While it might seem a bit... I don't know... selfish... I feel like it might be the best way to figure out my feelings for you two. I'm not sure if I worded that-"

"No. You didn't." Nora said, chuckling.

"But we get it. You're not sure how you feel yet. And you think a date might help you figure out how you truly feel about us. But you also want it to be an actual date. You're just not sure how to say it without it coming out as selfish or something along those lines." Pyrrha added, also chuckling.

"Yeah. I think it might help me figure out my feelings." Jaune said, still blushing but relieved they understood what he was trying to say.

"I think that's a good idea." Nora said.

"Same." Pyrrha agreed.

"Okay. Thanks." Jaune said.

"But who are you going to take out on a date first? Me or Nora. Or both?" Pyrrha asked.

"I. Uh. I-"

"Don't worry, Jaune. You don't have to worry. We won't be mad or jealous if you pick the other. In fact, we'll let you in on a little secret." Nora said.

"What's that?" Jaune asked, curious.

"When we were out in Vale before we learned about the contracts, Pyrrha and I agreed to something."

"Well. I'm pretty sure we would have done this even if we hadn't talked about it on the bullhead." Pyrrha said, blushing.

"And what's that?" Jaune asked.

"Sharing you, Jaune. We agreed that as soon as one of us gets into a relationship with you, we'll help the other out. But now we don't need to, considering we're getting married." Nora explained.

"Oh." Jaune said, not expecting that.

"So, who are you going to take on a date first?" Pyrrha asked. Jaune sighed a bit, still feeling uneasy at having to choose between his friends/future wives. But after a moment, he decided.

"Nora."

"YES!" Nora cheered, raising her hands in the air. "Oops. Sorry, Pyrrha."

"It's fine. I would have done the same thing." Pyrrha said, chuckling.

"Don't worry, Pyr. I'll take you on a date tomorrow." Jaune said, smiling.

"Thanks, Jaune. I'm looking forward to it." Pyrrha said, smiling.

"You're welcome."

"Wait. That means you're taking me on a date today." Nora said, surprised.

"Yup." Jaune said, smiling. But his eyes became wide with shock a second later. "Wait. Do you have something to do later? I'm sorry. I-I should have asked you first. W-when will-"

"It's fine, Jaune." Nora said, squeezing his hand. "I just wasn't expecting it. And don't worry. I don't have anything else to do later. And even if I did, I would have just pushed them back. I would be glad to go out on a date with you."

"Alright." Jaune said, sighing in relief. "So. Uh. Do you want to go now or later?"

"We can go now. Just let me get ready."

"Alright."

"Have fun, you two." Pyrrha said, smiling and excited about her date tomorrow.

"We will. Also, what will you be doing while we're out?" Nora asked.

"I need to make a few calls. First, to my mom so I can tell her everything that's happened and that I'm going on a date with my future husband tomorrow. And the second thing, which will take the longest, is calling my sponsors." Pyrrha answered before letting out a frustrated sigh. "I'm sure they are furious about this."

"Do you want us to bring you back something?" Jaune asked.

"Maybe some chocolate. I could always use some after dealing with my sponsors."

"Alright."

"We'll pick some up when we come back." Nora said before turning to Jaune. "Just give me a minute, and we can go."

"Okay." Jaune said as Nora entered the bathroom. But as soon as the door closed, he turned back to Pyrrha with a worried expression. "Are you sure you're alright with marrying me in an arranged contract?"

"Yes, Jaune. I'm sure." Pyrrha said before gently guiding Jaune to his bed and making him sit down. "Jaune. Listen to me."

"Okay."

"Jaune. I know you're worried, not for yourself, but for me, Nora, and the others. And it's understandable. But you don't have to worry about me or Nora. I want this to happen. Nora wants this to happen. *WE* want this to happen, even if it wasn't happening because of the contracts our parents made a long time ago. We both love you a lot. So, please. Calm down, Jaune. You don't have to worry."

"B-but. But what if-"

"As I said, Jaune. You don't have to worry. Even if this date doesn't work out, but I hope it does, and you find out you don't return our feelings, we won't be mad. We'll still be friends."

"She's right, Jaune." Nora said, exiting the bathroom and heading to sit on the other side of Jaune. "Even if it doesn't work out, but I hope it does, we will still be friends."

"Thanks, you two." Jaune said with a genuine smile. But it went away a second later. However, before he could say why, the others beat him to it.

"And don't worry about the others you're also going to marry. We know it's going to be hard and possibly dangerous. But no matter what happens. We will always be by your side." Nora said, wrapping an arm around Jaune's.

"Always." Pyrrha added, doing the same.

"Thanks, guys. I'm so glad I have you two as my friends... and future wives." Jaune said, smiling. "And I promise I will give you two the best lives possible."

"We know. Thank you, Jaune." They said, closing their eyes and leaning into him. Feeling bold but also wanting to show them his thanks, Jaune pulled them close before kissing both of them on their cheeks. They blushed before moving slightly to hug him. They stayed like that for a few moments before separating.

"Alright. Enjoy your date." Pyrrha said. "And don't forget my chocolate."

"We will, and we won't forget." Jaune said as he and Nora stood up.

"See you later, Pyrrha." Nora said as they exited the dorm and headed to the bullheads. But as they made their way there, Nora laid her head on Jaune's shoulder while holding his hand. Blushing, Jaune laid his head on hers while squeezing her hand back.

Forty-five Minutes Later

"So, what do you have planned for the first part of our date?" Nora asked as they exited the bullhead.

"A few things. And I have a few ideas for the first part." Jaune answered. "How about I list them, and you pick what we do first?"

"Alright."

"First is ice skating."

"Too cold. And I don't know how to ice skate."

"Yeah, it can be a bit cold. And if you want, I can teach you another time."

"Sure. But another time. What else?"

"There's bowling."

"Well, it has been a while since I've gone bowling. But we can do that if we can't decide on anything else. What else?"

"There's a street fair nearby. It has lots of games and things we can buy."

"Oh. Let's go there!" Nora excitedly said.

"Alright." Jaune said, chuckling.

Grabbing each other's hands, Jaune led Nora to where the street fair was. Luckily, it was only about a five-minute walk from the bullheads. Once they got there, they realized that the fair was far bigger than they expected. It reminded them of the Vytal Festival. There were lots of games, food stands, and even a few rides. Thankfully, for Jaune, there were a few that wouldn't trigger his motion sickness.

"So, what do you want to do first?" Jaune asked.

"How about we play some of the games first." Nora answered.

"Alright."

Looking around, Jaune and Nora saw a few stalls with games but decided against playing them as they knew they were rigged. But after a moment, they spotted one they could play: Skeeball. Going over to it, Jaune paid for their turns. And Jaune immediately showed the skills one needed to keep one's allowance safe when growing up with seven sisters. All except one of the balls landed in the 100 points hole. However, Nora wasn't that far behind in the score, either. And by the end of the round, Jaune had 310 points while Nora had 290. Once the game ended and the machines gave the tickets, Jaune and Nora traded them for their prizes. However, instead of getting one for himself, Jaune asked for the sloth plushie and gave it to Nora.

"Thanks, Jaune." Nora said after kissing Jaune on the cheek, causing him to blush. "But you don't need to shower me with gifts."

"I know. But you deserve it, Nora." Jaune said, earning another kiss on the cheek.

"So, now, which game?"

"How about the balloon dart game?"

"Sure."

Heading over, Jaune and Nora paid for their darts and started trying to pop the balloons. And this kept up for what felt like the next few hours. Both Nora and Jaune having fun as they tried various games. And even though some of them were rigged, they still enjoyed playing. Soon after, they went to the Whack-A-Mole machines, where Nora easily won. Afterward, they tried the game where you had to knock down some bottles. And just like the Whack-A-Mole game, Nora easily knocked down the bottles three times in a row, while Jaune only managed to knock one set down.

"Now, what game do you want to try?" Nora asked as they walked through the fair.

"Well, there is only one other game that we can play that is not rigged beyond belief." Jaune answered.

"Which one is that?"

"The Strongman game."

"Alright."

Heading over to the nearby Strongman game, they waited in line for their turn. But as they did, they received some aws when others saw them holding each other's hand with Nora laying her head on Jaune's shoulder. But they also heard some snickering and mockery coming their way from some others, primarily from the Shade

students. After a few moments, it was their turn, with Jaune paying for the both of them. Grabbing the hammer, Jaune lifted it and brought it down on the lever. The force behind it made the puck go up to the 'close enough' score.

"Knew it." A Shade student said, causing the others to chuckle. But Jaune and Nora ignored them.

"Your turn, Nora." Jaune said as he handed her the hammer.

"Thanks, Jauney." Nora said as she grabbed the hammer. She lifted it over her head and brought it down, striking the lever, causing the puck to fly up and hit the bell so hard that it dented it.

"And we have a winner." The owner said as she handed Nora her prize.

"Nice job, Nora." Jaune said as they left the game and the shocked Shade students.

"Thanks, Jaune."

"Now, what do you want to do?"

"How about we go on some rides."

"Sure." Jaune nervously answered. He was honestly not looking forward to some of them as he knew they would trigger his motion sickness. However, he was genuinely surprised when Nora held up a bag containing his motion sickness pills.

"Don't worry, Jaune. I know all about your motion sickness. And while I didn't know what you had planned, I grabbed them just in case." Nora explained.

"Thanks, Nora." Jaune said as he opened the bag and took one of the pills. "So, which one do you want to go on first?"

"Let's go on some of the roller coasters."

"Sure."

Going over to a nearby one, they got in line and waited for their turn. Thankfully, for some reason, the lines were not as long as they typically are. However, while good that they didn't have to wait long, it also meant that Jaune had less time to steel himself for the ride. But the thought of potentially ruining their date made him soldier up and pushed through the feeling.

Half Hour Later

'Thank Oum; I didn't throw up.' Jaune thought as he and Nora sat on a bench and relaxed.

"That was fun." Nora said, leaning into him.

"It was."

"You almost threw up a few times, didn't you?" Nora asked, chuckling.

"Yes. Sorry."

"It's fine, Jaune. You don't have to apologize."

"Sorry."

"So, what next?" Nora asked, rolling her eyes while leaning into him.

"How about we go watch a movie?"

"Sure. Which one?"

"There are a couple of movies out. There's 47 Ronin, The Mask of Zorro, Tangled, Cold Bodies Warm Hearts, Thor: Love and Thun-"

"THAT ONE! LET'S WATCH THE NEW THOR MOVIE!" Nora excitedly said, causing Jaune to chuckle.

"Alright. Let's go."

Getting up, they made their way out of the fair and toward the theater they always go to when they watch movies. Thankfully, like the fair, the ticket line wasn't that long. Once they got to the front, they paid for their tickets before heading in to get their snacks and drinks. And after a bit of discussing, Jaune and Nora settled on a medium popcorn and soda. After getting their order, they made their way to the correct room and then their seats.

"How do you think the movie will be?" Nora asked.

"Well, if it is anything like the other one, it should be good." Jaune answered.

"Hopefully." Nora said as she took a sip of her drink.

But instead of putting it in the cupholder it already was in, Nora placed it in the one that was on her side. She then raised the armrest before adjusting herself so she could lean into Jaune more comfortably. Blushing, Jaune took a risk and raised his arm so he could pull Nora into a hug and closer to him. This action caused Nora to blush, as she was not expecting it. But she wasn't going to complain. Instead, she snuggled into Jaune while wrapping her arms around him as the movie began.

Two Hours Later

"Well. That was... something." Jaune said as he and Nora exited the theater.

"Yeah. It wasn't the greatest, but it wasn't bad either." Nora agreed.

"One thing that could have made it better was toning down the jokes and making the characters actually sound serious in the few dire situations." Jaune added.

"True. But I don't think I'll see it again. Maybe if the others want to see it, I might join them."

"Eh. I don't think they would since some of them didn't like Ragnarok. And if they didn't like that one, I'm pretty sure they would despise this one."

"You're right. I think the 47 Ronin movie might have been better." Nora said. "So, now what?"

"How about we go get something to eat?"

"Sure. What do you have in mind?"

"There's this Vacuo restaurant nearby. We can go there."

"Alright. Lead the way."

Smiling, Jaune grabbed Nora's hand and led her to the restaurant.

Twenty minutes Later

"Alright. I'll be back with your orders shortly." The waiter said before leaving.

"This seems like a nice place." Nora said as she looked around the restaurant.

"It is. And the music isn't half bad either." Jaune said, looking at the band that was playing on the other side of the restaurant.

"Well, while we wait for our food." Nora said, turning to face Jaune. "Tell me a bit about yourself, Jaune."

"Um. Like what?" Jaune asked, surprised as he was not expecting that.

"Your favorite foods, your adventures with your family, anything. I want to get to know you more. I know some things about you but not

a lot. And in turn, I'll tell you a bit about myself." Nora explained. "Besides, it would be a good idea if we knew more about each other since we're soon going to be married."

"True." Jaune said before thinking about what he should say. "Is there anything you want to know specifically?"

"Tell me about your family. I know only a little about your sisters."

"Alright. Well, as you know, I have seven sisters."

"And I have to ask again, do your parents know about protection?"

"No. They always wanted to have a lot of children."

"Do you think that had some part in the marriage contracts?"

"I doubt it. My parents used to love drinking. And the contracts happened during that time. Well, if what they say is true."

"That explains a lot. Anyway. About your sisters."

"I have seven. And this is their names from oldest to youngest. Amber, Saphron, Dahlia, Midori, Primrose, Poppy, and Clementine. Although Primrose and Poppy are twins, so they are the same age."

"It must have been chaotic growing up."

"Oh, yeah. Do you have any siblings?"

"No. I'm an only child. Although, I sometimes wonder what it would have been if I had brothers or sisters."

"There are pros and cons to having siblings. Without siblings, it can be lonely, but you do have privacy. With siblings, privacy is nonexistent, but you have people to talk to and ones that will always have your back."

"Still. What do your sisters do?"

"Well, the twins and Clementine are still in school. Midori is also in school, but she's in medical school. Dahlia is a Cultural Anthropologist. Saphron is in Mantle. She's an Administrative Assistant, which works in her favor considering she's also looking after her son."

"You have a nephew, Jaune?" Nora asked, surprised.

"Yup. His name is Adrian." Jaune said as he pulled a photo of his nephew and his parents.

"Aw. He's cute. And the blonde one is your sister, right?"

"Yup. That's Saphron. And the other is Terra, Saphron's wife."

"They seem like a happy family."

"They are."

"And what about your sister, Amber?"

"She's a flavorist."

"What's that?"

"Think of it as someone who creates natural and artificial flavors."

"Neat. But since we're on the topic of family." Nora said while blushing. "Have you ever thought about having kids?"

"Only like once or twice. But that was before the contracts. But still, I wouldn't mind having some kids."

"Do you know how many you want? Do you want to have a large family like how your parents wanted or not?"

"I'm not sure. But I wouldn't mind having a large family with lots of kids. Why?"

"No reason." Nora said, blushing. While she wasn't sure how many kids she wanted, she did want to have some with Jaune in the future. But that also meant getting more... intimate with him. And even though this was their first date, she was looking forward to it. "And what do your parents do?"

"My mom's an accountant. And my dad is a Station manager." Jaune answered as the server returned with their food.

"Enjoy." He said before leaving.

"You have an interesting family, Jaune." Nora said as they began eating.

"I do." Jaune said, chuckling.

"But now it's your turn. What would you like to know about me?"

"Hmm." Jaune thought. "If you had to choose a different career, what would it be?"

"You know it's okay to ask me something personal, Jaune. But I would be a demolition expert since I love explosions."

"I can see that." Jaune said. "Okay. Here's a question."

"What is it?"

"Where would you like to live once we graduate from Beacon? Or if something happens that makes us leave earlier."

"Hmm. I don't think I have ever thought of that. Where do your parents live? And where do you want to live?"

"My parents live in Northern Vale. And honestly, I haven't thought about it either. But I think I would like to live in Mistral or one of the coastal towns of Vale."

"I think I would choose to live there as well." Nora said after a moment.

"Is everything alright?" The server asked, surprising the two.

"Yes. Everything is alright." Jaune answered.

"Okay." The server said before leaving.

"I think we should start eating before our food gets called." Nora said.

"But we can still tell each other some things about us." Jaune said. Nora smiled and nodded as they enjoyed their food while their free hands held each other.

One Hour Later

"That was delicious." Nora said as they exited the restaurant.

"It was." Jaune agreed.

"But we should probably head back to Beacon." Nora said, seeing the sun setting.

"We should. But there's one last place I want to take you before we return to Beacon."

"And where's that?"

"It's a secret." Jaune answered, smiling.

"Ooh. A secret." Nora said with a devious smile.

"Come on." Jaune said, rolling his eyes.

Ten Minutes Later

"Okay. Now this is a great way to end a date." Nora said as they watched the sunset from the pier. While a bit cliche, it was still very romantic. And she was glad she could spend it with Jaune.

"It is." Jaune said as they held each other's hand. However, he noticed that Nora seemed to be a bit tense for some reason. "Is everything okay, Nora?"

"Y-yes. It's just that something is on my mind." She answered while fidgeting a bit.

"What is it? Maybe I can help." Jaune said, turning to face her.

"Well, it involves you."

"Really? Did I do something wrong?" Jaune asked, worried.

"No." Nora answered before sighing. *'Well, here goes nothing.'* "Jaune."

"Yes?"

"Remember what you said earlier?"

"Uh, what did I say earlier?" Jaune asked, confused.

"About your feelings and how you said a date might help you figure them out."

"Oh. Right. That." Jaune said, knowing what Nora was referring to.

"So, Jaune. Did you figure out your feeling?" Nora asked, hopeful.

'Do I?' Jaune mentally asked himself as he looked at Nora. While it still might have only been a single date, he felt like he had his answer. And after giving it some thought, Jaune felt like Ren was right when he said he already held feelings for Nora and Pyrrha. While he was still unsure about Pyrrha, he now had the answer for Nora.

"Jaune?" Nora nervously asked.

"Yes. I did."

"What is it?"

"I'm pretty sure I love you, Nora." Jaune said, causing a surge of happiness to well up in Nora.

"Really?" She asked, shocked.

"Yes."

"YAY!" Nora cheered, causing Jaune to chuckle. After a moment, she calmed down.

"So, I guess that means we're together, right?" Jaune nervously asked.

"Of course, Jaune. But remember, we're getting married soon because of the contracts." Nora said, chuckling.

"Oh, right." Jaune said, scratching his head. However, as he did, Nora smiled as she gazed at him. But as she did, she felt a blush creep on her face when a specific thought came to her mind.

'Should I do it? Or should I wait?' Nora thought, wondering if it would be a good time to kiss Jaune. But unlike the other times, this time it would be proper. And by that, she meant on the lips. Breathing out, she placed one hand on Jaune's shoulder and the other on his cheek.

"Nora?" Jaune asked, confused.

However, Jaune became shocked when Nora suddenly pulled him in close and kissed him passionately and tenderly on the lips. But the shock only lasted a few seconds as his mind finally processed what was happening. Closing his eyes, Jaune placed his hands on Nora's face and returned the kiss with just as much passion and

tenderness. The result was Nora moaning slightly at feeling her crush kissing her back. After a few moments, they separated while maintaining eye contact.

"That..." Jaune began, panting.

"Was amazing." Nora said, giggling before pecking Jaune's lips again.

"It was." Jaune agreed.

"But as much as I want to stay here, we need to head back." Nora said when they saw the sun was nearly fully set.

"Right." Jaune said as they got up and headed back to the bullheads. But not before making a quick stop at one of the nearby shops to get Pyrrha her chocolate.

One Hour Later

"Good night, Jaune. And thanks for the date." Nora said as they reached their dorm.

"You're welcome, Nora. And good night." Jaune said as they entered and closed the door.

And just as they expected, both Pyrrha and Ren were already asleep as it was past eleven. Going over to their beds, Jaune grabbed his stuff while Nora entered the bathroom to change into her pajamas. A few moments later, Nora exited, and Jaune entered to change into his sleep clothes. Once he was done, he exited the bathroom and headed to his bed. But before he could get in, he stopped when Nora tapped his shoulder.

"Jaune?" She whispered.

"Yes?" He asked.

"Do you mind if I sleep with you tonight?"

"Uh. S-sure." Jaune answered, blushing.

"Thanks." Nora said. Nodding, Jaune got into his bed, followed by Nora, who snuggled into him. Blushing, Jaune smiled and grabbed Nora's hand before closing his eyes and falling asleep a second later. Nora also smiled and pulled the blankets over them before falling asleep as well.

Notes:

A simple, loving chapter for Nora. More information in the next chapter's notes.

Chapter 4

WAIT, WHAT! HOW MANY I'M MARRYING!?

Chapter 4: And so it begins.

Part 2: Pyrrha's turn

Morning

'That was the best sleep I had in a while.' Jaune thought, fighting through a yawn as he opened his eyes. However, he froze when he realized that Nora was still holding onto him. But it passed when the events of yesterday came flooding back. A smile formed on his face as he gazed at Nora as she started to wake up.

"Morning, Jaune." Nora said, rubbing her eyes.

"Morning, Nora." Jaune said, smiling. But his smile grew when Nora pulled him in for a quick kiss.

"We see you two had a great night." Ren said, getting their attention. Turning to him, Nora and Jaune blushed when they saw Pyrrha and Ren smiling at them. Although, they did notice that Pyrrha seemed excited about something. But they figured it was because Jaune would be taking her on a date today.

"We did." Nora said, leaning into Jaune's side.

"What time did you two get back?"

"Around eleven or a bit after." Jaune answered.

"How was your date? And how did it end?" Pyrrha excitedly asked.

"It was great. And I'll show you." Nora answered with a smirk before pulling Jaune into a kiss.

"YES!" Pyrrha shouted, happy for Nora. But she was also happy because she now felt confident Jaune also returned her feelings. And she was looking forward to their date.

'Well. It looks like I was right. Jaune did have feelings for Nora; he just didn't realize it yet. And I'm confident he feels the same way for Pyrrha.' Ren thought, happy. *'But I can't jump to conclusions just yet. I'll just have to wait and see until Jaune and Pyrrha return from their date. I just hope the other dates with the other girls can go this well. Or, at the very least, with very few injuries to Jaune. '*

"So, when will we leave for our date, Jaune?" Pyrrha asked, moving to sit next to him. She then grabbed his arm and leaned into him.

"Um. How about after breakfast?" Jaune suggested with a light blush.

"Sure." Pyrrha answered.

"Speaking of time. What time is it?" Nora asked.

"About eight, which means that breakfast will be ready in about half an hour." Ren answered after checking the time on his scroll.

"You think that's enough time, Pyr?" Jaune asked.

"Maybe we can leave about a half hour after breakfast. It will give us time to let the food settle. And it will give me some time to get ready." Pyrrha answered.

"Alright." Jaune said before remembering something. "Oh. And we got you your chocolate. It's on your-"

"I-I already ate it." Pyrrha interjected, blushing.

"Of course you did." Jaune said, chuckling at his partner's love for chocolate. "Anyway. We should get ready."

"Right."

Twenty Minutes Later

"Hey, guys." Jaune said as Team Rwby sat across from them.

"Hey, Jaune." Ruby said with a pout as she began to eat an actual breakfast that consisted of whole-grain breakfast porridge instead of her usual chocolate chip cookies.

"Morning, Team Jnpr." Weiss said.

"Morning." Blake said through a yawn.

"Morning." Yang said as she carefully watched Ruby. Everyone was confused but understood when Ruby tried to sneakily eat a cookie she swiped but failed when Yang caught it. "How did you guys sleep?"

"Pretty good." Nora said with a smile.

"Not the best at first, but pretty good later on." Pyrrha answered. While she had trouble trying falling asleep at first, primarily because she kept on thinking Jaune had planned for their date, she did eventually fall asleep. And once Pyrrha did, she had a fantastic dream of her and Jaune happily married with children.

"Great." Jaune answered, blushing.

"A bit rough but decent." Ren answered. He typically fell asleep quickly, but his nerves and worries for Jaune kept him up for the better part of the night.

"That's good." Yang said.

"But what was the noise last night?" Blake asked. "I heard someone entering your dorm late at night."

"Oh. That was me." Jaune answered without missing a beat. "My sister was calling me. She lives across Remnant, and she works for

most of the day. So, it was one of the few times we could talk. And I didn't want to wake my teammates, so I left the dorm."

"Where does she work? And what's her job?" Ruby asked, trying to eat another cookie, only for Blake to swipe it and hand it to Yang.

"She's a Cultural Anthropologist and works on the coast of Mistral."

"A Cultural Anthropologist? I wasn't expecting that. But it's always nice seeing people pick that profession." Weiss said, surprised, but in a good way.

"Anyway. What's everyone's schedule today?" Ruby asked, using her semblance to try and eat a cookie. But this time, a glyph stopped her dead in her tracks.

"I need to finish researching a few things for Professor Peach's class." Ren answered.

"Why? I thought we didn't have any assignments for her class." Blake asked.

"We don't. This is just some extra credit."

"Don't you have an A in that class?" Yang asked, confused.

"It doesn't matter if you have an A in a class. Extra credit is always good." Weiss interjected, unknowingly helping Ren with his cover story.

"What about the rest of you?" Blake asked.

"I'm probably just going to relax a bit." Nora answered. "Oh. But there's an assignment I need to do. It's not due until a week after vacation, but I want to get it out of the way now."

"What about you, Cereal Girl?" Yang asked.

"Jaune and I are going to spend the day in Vale. We haven't been able to spend any time together as partners recently. So we figured we do so today." Pyrrha half-lied. She almost told the others the truth about how Jaune was going to take her out on a date but stopped herself just in time.

"And what about you four?" Jaune asked.

"I need to finish getting ready. I'm almost done. Then I need to finish a few assignments for Ms. Goodwitch's class." Weiss answered.

"I need to work on Bumblebee. And then I might watch a movie." Yang answered.

"I want to work on Crescent Rose. And then I might join Yang in watching a movie." Ruby added.

"What about you, Blake?" Jaune asked.

"I need to get ready. My parents asked me to come to Menagerie." Blake answered.

"Weren't you already planning on visiting them?" Pyrrha asked, confused.

"I was. But they called me last night. My parents said they had something important to tell me and that it could not be put off any longer. They want me to come as soon as I can."

"Hopefully, it's nothing too bad." Nora said, worried.

"Hopefully."

"When are you leaving?" Ren asked.

"Day after tomorrow. It's the earliest flight available."

"Well. Good luck." Jaune said.

"Thanks."

"Oh. That reminds me. When are you leaving, Weiss?" Ruby asked, curious.

"Blake's leaving Monday. I'm leaving Tuesday." Weiss answered.

"Did your parents tell you what they wanted to talk to you about?" Yang asked.

"Or is it private, and you can't tell us?" Pyrrha asked.

"Well. It *is* private. But even if it wasn't, I can't tell you since I don't know what it is about. My mom didn't tell me anything about what she wanted to talk to Winter and me about. I even called Winter to see if she knew anything, but she didn't."

"Same. My folks didn't tell me anything." Blake added.

"Hopefully, it's nothing too upsetting." Ren said, having already figured out what Blake's parents and Weiss's mother wanted to talk to them about.

"I doubt it would be upsetting. My parents probably just have something they need to do, so they wanted me to visit earlier." Blake said.

"I wish it was the same for me. It probably has something to do with Jacques." Wiess sighed while rubbing her face. "My mom probably wants to warn us about a possible arranged marriage Jacques set up for one of us to keep business relations 'happy.'"

"H-hopefully, that's not the case." Jaune said, remembering seeing Wiess's and Winter's names on the contracts.

"Hopefully." Weiss said as they finished their breakfast.

"Well. See you guys." Ruby said as she and the rest of her team got up and left.

"We should probably get going. I still need to finish the assignment for Professor Peach." Ren said.

"And I need to finish that assignment. And I also need to call my parents to see if they have any other information about our wedding." Nora said.

"Do you want to go on the date now, Pyr? Or maybe in a half hour?" Jaune asked. However, a familiar ringtone told him the answer.

"Great." Pyrrha sighed, annoyed. However, to her team's surprise, Pyrrha took out her scroll, answered the call, and then immediately hung up.

"Uh?" Jaune asked, confused.

"My sponsors have been calling me nonstop about our future marriage and the contract's validity. And once they found out they couldn't cancel it, they tried to talk me out of it." Pyrrha explained, smiling. "But they can talk until they are mute; they are not going to talk me out of it. Like I told you yesterday, Jaune. I want this to happen."

"Thanks, Pyr." Jaune said, smiling but also unsure of what to say. While he now knew about his feelings for Nora, he still had to figure out his feelings for Pyrrha. But even if he didn't return her feelings, Jaune was still glad he would be married to a great friend that cared for him and that he cared for back. "So? Uh? When do you want to go?"

"Give me about twenty minutes to get ready." Pyrrha said before blushing. "And if you don't mind, Jaune. I would like to... 'lead'... the date. I'm not sure if that is the correct term."

"Sure."

"You already had a date planned for a while, didn't you?" Nora teased with a smirk.

"Maybe." Pyrrha blushed.

"Sure, Pyr. I'll let you... lead. Yeah, I'm not sure if that's the correct term." Jaune said, earning a chuckle from his team. "Anyway. I'll follow you."

"I'm not sure if that's the correct way either." Pyrrha said, smirking while rolling her eyes. "Anyway. Give me about twenty minutes, and we can go."

"Where should we meet?"

"How about by the bullheads."

"Sure." Pyrrha agreed.

"Alright. I'll meet you there. But first, I need to use the bathroom." Jaune said before leaving.

"And I'll go check our mail." Ren said before leaving for the mailroom.

"Are you excited?" Nora asked Pyrrha.

"Uh. Let's continue this in our dorm." Pyrrha said, seeing some people were trying to eavesdrop on their conversation.

"Sure." Nora said as they headed to their dorm.

Five Minutes Later

"So, are you excited?" Nora asked as she closed the door.

"Of course. I'm finally going on a date with Jaune. Granted, this was not the way I envisioned getting a date with him." Pyrrha excitedly answered.

"I don't think anyone could have envisioned this."

"Still. I'm glad I'm going on a date with him."

"But?"

"I-I'm a bit nervous. While I have everything planned out-"

"You're still nervous Jaune might not return your feelings."

"Yes."

"Don't worry, Pyrrha. I'm sure he does." Nora assured, placing her hand on Pyrrha's shoulder.

"Thanks, Nora."

"Anytime."

"But. Can you help me with one more thing?"

"Sure. What is it?"

"Can you help me pick out some clothes for the date?"

"Pyrrha. You don't need to worry about that. I went on my date with Jaune yesterday in my usual clothes."

"Still. Can you help me pick out some clothes for my date Jaune? And so I don't get spotted as easily."

"Oh, right. I forgot about that." Nora sheepishly said.

While Nora did remember that Pyrrha was famous, she often forgot how other people reacted when they saw her. It is why they always chose to use less crowded or less used routes while in Vale. But they grew accustomed to this that she forgot the reason for it.

"Sure. I'll help you out." Nora said.

"Thanks, Nora." Pyrrha said, signing in relief.

"No problem. Now. Let's get you ready."

Twenty Minutes Later

'I wonder what Pyrrha has planned for us.' Jaune thought as he waited for Pyrrha by the bullheads.

"Jaune!" Pyrrha shouted.

Turning to where it came from, Jaune blushed and felt his eyes widen when he saw Pyrrha running toward him. While he might be dense-headed, even Jaune knew Pyrrha was beautiful. But there was something about her wearing something so casual that brought out another level of beauty in her. She was wearing some jeans, a solid black t-shirt, a cropped red coat, and some sneakers. Pyrrha also had her hair undone instead of her usual ponytail. And honestly, Jaune preferred this look as opposed to her usual attire. It made Pyrrha seem more relaxed and free from the stress of being a celebrity. It made Jaune remember the promise he made to Pyrrha a while back. And that was to ensure that Pyrrha got to experience life to the fullest and finally do the things she couldn't do due to her training or sponsors.

"Hey, Pyrrha." Jaune said as Pyrrha reached him. And once she did, he noticed that she had some sunglasses hanging on her shirt and a baseball hat in her hand. Jaune was initially confused but then realized it was so people wouldn't recognize her as easily. And while not the best, it was still better than nothing and getting mobbed as a result. "Wow."

"Wow?" Pyrrha asked, raising an eyebrow.

"Yes, wow. You look beautiful."

"Thanks, Jaune." Pyrrha said, blushing.

"Ready to go?"

"Yes." Pyrrha answered as she put on her sunglasses, followed by the baseball hat. Smiling, Jaune grabbed her hand, causing them to blush, as they got onto the bullhead.

Half an Hour Later

"So what do you have planned for our date, Pyr?" Jaune asked as they exited the bullhead.

"Well, for the first part, there's this workshop I signed us up for." Pyrrha answered as she adjusted her hat and glasses.

"What kind of workshop?" Jaune asked, curious.

"A couples pottery workshop."

"Oh, I always wanted to try making pottery."

"Same. And now we can do it together."

"Where is it?"

"Follow me." Pyrrha answered. But instead of running ahead, she grabbed Jaune's hand and laid her head on his shoulder. Blushing, Jaune laid his head on hers while squeezing her hand.

Twenty Minutes Later

"Alright, class. As you all know, today is a partner workshop day. There will be two parts for class today. In the first part, you'll be working on separate projects that you will give to your partner once you're done. The second part is where you and your partner will work together on a single pottery project. But don't forget to have fun. Now, begin." The instructor said before leaving.

"What do you plan on making?" Jaune asked as he began forming his pottery project. While Jaune had never done anything like this before, he had done his fair share of art projects with his sisters, so he had some vague idea of what to do. But that didn't mean it was

flawless, as he had already made two mistakes within the first ten seconds.

"I'm going to make you a candle holder. Or, what I hope can be called a candle holder." Pyrrha answered. Since this was the first time she had done anything like this, she planned on doing a very simple project.

"I want to make you a keepsake holder so that you can keep mementos of our time together or other nice moments." Jaune answered but sighed when the keepsake holder collapsed, meaning he had to start over again. "If I can make it tall enough so it can hold your mementos."

"Don't worry, Jaune. I'll like it either way." Pyrrha assured, smiling at him. However, Jaune chuckled when some of the clay flew off the spin table and hit her in the face.

"Here. I got it." Jaune said as he used his towel to clean her face.

"Thanks, Jaune." Pyrrha said, chuckling.

"You're welcome."

Turning back to their projects, Pyrrha and Jaune focused on making their sculptures. And just as most would expect, they had a lot of trouble and often had to start from scratch. Granted, they wouldn't have had to start over as many times as they did had they actually been focused on their projects. And the reason was that they kept on talking and laughing with each other as they shared some stories. Yet, they didn't mind all the retries as they were having too much fun and were enjoying each other's company. And after two hours, they finally finished.

"Alright, class. Time's up." The instructor said.

"That was fun." Pyrrha said as her table slowed to a halt.

"It was." Jaune agreed.

"Even though our projects didn't exactly turn out how we wanted." Pyrrha said, chuckling. While it did slightly resemble a candle holder, anyone could easily confuse it with something else at a glance.

"Yeah. But it was still fun." Jaune said as he looked over the keepsake holder. While it was much smaller than he wanted, and the top didn't fit perfectly, it still resembled a keepsake holder and was big enough to put a few things in it.

"Alright, class. Now. One of you slide your chair to your partner's table so we can begin the next part of the class." The instructor said as other employees collected the projects and took them away to harden them in the furnace. "Remember. This time, it's a group project. Now, begin."

"So, what should we make?" Pyrrha asked.

"I-I-" Jaune struggled to say or speak. While others slid their chairs to be next to their partner, Pyrrha did something different. She sat in between Jaune's legs, causing him to go beet red in the face.

"How about a pendant?"

"I-I think that might be a bit too advanced for us."

"True. So what should we make?"

"How about a vase?"

"Sure. And it will make a nice addition to our dorm." Pyrrha agreed as they began sculpting the clay.

And just like with the first project, Pyrrha and Jaune had to restart several times. Although, a couple of times were entirely Jaune's fault as he was still a mess from having Pyrrha so close to him like this. But it was not at all unpleasant. It almost felt natural, like it was supposed to be like that.

'I wouldn't mind spending the rest of my life like this with Pyrrha or Nora. But what about the others?' Jaune wondered. But seeing Pyrrha smiling caused him to smile and push those thoughts to the back of his mind. *'Another time, I'll worry about that. Right now, Pyrrha is more important.'*

One Hour Later

"Alright. Thanks, everyone, for coming to the class. We will send your projects to your addresses once they are done baking. Have a good day." The instructor said as everyone cleaned up.

"That was fun. And messy." Jaune said as they exited the building.

"Messy is an understatement. I think I will take a shower when we return to Beacon." Pyrrha said, smiling. "But yeah. It was a lot of fun. But I'm glad I got to spend it with you, Jaune."

"Same. And I'm glad I got to do it with you, Pyr." Jaune agreed with a light blush, earning another smile from the spartan. "So, what's next?"

"There's another thing I have been wanting to try with you, Jaune. And unlike the pottery, you have some experience with this."

"What is it then?"

"I want you to teach me how to rollerblade."

"Rollerblade?" Jaune asked, surprised. While he might not have rollerbladed in a while, he was still decent at it. And he could teach her.

"Yes. I've seen a lot of people doing it, and it always seemed like fun." Pyrrha explained. "Plus, it will give us another reason to hang out even more."

"We don't need a reason, Pyrrha. Anytime you want to hang out, you just have to ask. And even if this contract marriage weren't

happening, I would still have loved to spend time with you." Jaune assured.

"A-and-"

"And even after the marriages happen, the same applies. Any time you want to hang out, you just have to ask. And I will always be there for you, just like you were always there for me."

"Thanks, Jaune." Pyrrha said, happy that she had fallen in love with him. While she still feared a rejection, Pyrrha was at least content to know the marriage wouldn't be unhappy or awkward and that Jaune would be there for her just as she had been there for him.

"You're welcome, Pyr. Now, where are we going for the rollerblading?"

"Oh, right." Pyrrha said, snapping back to focus. "I got us reservations for this place just opened up near the shore."

"Wait. If it just opened up, how did you get us reservations? Wouldn't it be packed?" Jaune asked, curious.

"Typically, yes. But there are a *few* perks to being famous. I just wished it didn't take away so many things." Pyrrha explained, looking downtrodden as all the memories of things she had to give up or couldn't do due to her fame came to mind. But she smiled again when Jaune pulled her into a tight hug.

"I know, Pyrrha. I know. But it doesn't have to be like that anymore. You don't have to worry about your sponsors or anything like that anymore. They won't bother you again. And as I promised you when I first learned about your fame, I will make sure you get to experience all the things you missed because of your fame. And I will keep that promise after our marriage. And I will still keep it until the day I die. Arc's promise." Jaune said before unconsciously kissing Pyrrha on the top of her head. But once his mind registered what he did, he blushed furiously but stayed there.

"Thanks, Jaune. I'm so happy and thankful that I have you as my partner and future husband. Thank you so much." Pyrrha said, giving him a hug, followed by a kiss on the cheek.

"You're welcome, Pyr." Jaune said as they separated.

"Now, come on. They aren't going to hold our reservation forever." Nodding, they raced to the place.

Ten Minutes Later

"Okay. We're here." Pyrrha said as they arrived.

"Latch Brothers Bounce?" Jaune asked, reading the name out loud. "I never heard of this place before."

"That's because this is their first store in Vale. They have a few in Mistral and are quite popular."

"In that case, let's head in."

Nodding, Jaune and Pyrrha headed inside and were almost blinded by the seizure-inducing strobe lights and deafened by the music blasting on the speakers. Making their way over to the counter, Pyrrha gave their names for the reservation. And as Jaune expected, it was a fake name so that no one would recognize her. Honestly, Jaune was semi-surprised that no one realized it was her considering her disguise wasn't the best. But he wasn't going to look a gift in the horse's mouth.

After a couple of minutes and giving their shoe sizes, Jaune and Pyrrha received their skates. Heading over to the chairs by the rink, they sat down and put on their skates. But while putting them on wasn't difficult, getting up and not falling over was an entirely different story. While Jaune managed to stay on his feet, Pyrrha struggled to stay on hers. But before she fell, Jaune grabbed her arms and steadied her.

"I got you, Pyrrha." Jaune said as he carefully guided her to the rink.

"Thanks, Jaune." Pyrrha said, smiling.

"Do you want me to grab one of those skating helpers?"

"No. I think I got it if I go slow and stay near the edge."

"Alright. But I'll stay by your side." Jaune said as they entered the rink.

"You don't need to, Jaune. You can go if you want."

"I know. But I want to stay by your side."

Blushing, Pyrrha nodded as they skated on the edge of the rink. And as one might expect, despite having excellent balance, Pyrrha nearly fell over a couple of times. But each time, Jaune was there to hold her steady. And almost in a role reversal, Jaune pointed out some minor faults and gave some advice on how to improve, just like she did when they sparred. Yet, Pyrrha didn't mind as she immensely enjoyed having Jaune by her side.

"There you go. You got it, Pyr. Now try moving away from the railing." Jaune said as he moved to the side to give her some space.

"Alright. Here goes." Pyrrha said as she moved away from the railing. While she wasn't fast, she did remain upright without losing her balance.

"There you go. Now you got it, Pyr."

"Thanks, Jaune." Pyrrha said, smiling.

Smiling back, Jaune grabbed Pyrrha's hand as they skated around the rink a few more times. But by the end of the third lap, the lights suddenly changed from seizure-inducing strobes to gentle, soft lights that one would see in romantic movies. The genre that the music

changed to reflected that. Soon, an announcer came over the loudspeaker.

'Okay, skaters. It's time. Get your partners and get onto the skate floor. This one is for all you lovers out there.' The announcer said as strobes of light in the shapes of hearts appeared all over the place.

"Huh. I wasn't expecting that." Jaune said, surprised that there were two couples events in a single day.

"Me neither." Pyrrha agreed.

While Pyrrha didn't plan on this, for the skating part at least, she wasn't going to let it go to waste. Grabbing Jaune's hand, she carefully maneuvered herself so she was right next to him. Once Pyrrha was, she laid her head on his shoulder. Naturally, Jaune blushed at this but grabbed her hand as they leisurely skated around the ring.

Two Hours Later

"We should come back again." Pyrrha said as they took off their skates.

"We should. And maybe we can bring the others." Jaune agreed as they put on their shoes.

"By others, do you mean Nora and Ren? Or do you mean all of your other wives?" Pyrrha asked with a smirk.

"I mean Nora and Ren."

"True. It would be a nice team bonding activity."

"That's why I want to bring them, considering we might not be able to spend any together as a team due to what's going to happen soon."

"That's true."

"Anyway." Jaune said as they got up and exited the building. "What now?"

"How about we get something to eat?"

"Sure. Where do you want to eat?"

"How about the ramen place the Shopkeep runs?"

"That sounds good."

Ten Minutes Later

"Here you go." The Shopkeep said as he handed Pyrrha and Jaune an enormous bowl of Shoyu ramen.

"Thanks." Jaune and Pyrrha said as they paid him before digging into their food.

"I still wonder why he chose to use these big bowls." Jaune said.

"Same." Pyrrha said before realizing something. "Oh, Jaune. Before I forget."

"What is it, Pyr?"

"Does your family have wedding traditions?"

"Wedding traditions?" Jaune asked, confused.

"Yes. We're soon getting married. I want to know if your family has any wedding traditions."

"Oh. Right. Let me think." Jaune said as he thought hard. While his family did have lots of *'traditions,'* they never celebrated all of them. And even the ones that did celebrate, they didn't follow how it's supposed to be entirely. But after thinking it over, only one came to mind, which was the one where the father 'gave away' the bride. "No. We only have one, and that really doesn't apply here."

"Oh. Well, that saves us some trouble."

"What about you? Does your family have any wedding traditions?"

"A couple."

"Can you give me some?"

"Sure. First, there are the Stefana crowns, which is a special ritual with crowns that are supposed to represent our unity. Think of the 'Tying The Knot' phase, as it's somewhat similar to that."

"That sounds interesting. What else?"

"Then there's the food tradition where the families make specific foods. And after that is the special dancing tradition called Kalamatiano. Afterward is the men's version called Zembekiko."

"Think you can send me a video of how to do the dance so I can practice?"

"Sure." Pyrrha answered. "But also, since we're on the topic of family traditions. When are we going to meet your parents?"

"W-what?" Jaune asked, caught off guard.

"Meet your parents, Jaune. While some call it a tradition, I think it would be nice if Nora and I could meet our future-in-laws. And I also think it would be great if you could meet our parents."

"True. And I know it might be a bit short notice, but perhaps we can make it this week since we don't have classes."

"Yeah. It's a bit short notice. But I think that would be fine. But we would need to run it by Nora and Ren. And we should also tell our parents to see if they could make it so we don't need to make separate trips. Also, should we invite team Rwby? I think they would like to meet your parents as well."

"I don't think so. But maybe another time." Jaune quickly answered. He is not looking forward to the confrontation and potential beating when Team Rwby learns they will marry him in an arranged marriage.

"Alright." Pyrrha shrugged. "Also. Do you know the names of the other sixteen people you're going to marry?"

"Yes. But I don't know them off the top of my head. When we get back, I can grab the contracts and tell you and Nora."

"Alright." Pyrrha said before fidgeting as another thought came to mind. And it was something she was both looking forward to and dreading at the same time. However, she tensed up when Jaune gently moved her so she was facing him. "Uh, Jaune?"

"You know. I was just thinking about something Ren told me before I went out on my date with Nora yesterday."

"And what's that?" Pyrrha asked, curious about what it was where Jaune was going.

"Like I told you two yesterday, I like you both a lot. And that I thought a date with you two would help me figure out my feelings. But before breakfast yesterday, Ren told me that I already did love both of you. I just hadn't realized it yet."

"J-jaune?" Pyrrha asked, sounding hopeful.

"I'm sure of my feelings, Pyrrha. I love you." Jaune said, smiling and causing the spartan's heart to soar.

However, before Jaune could say anything, Pyrrha pulled him into a deep kiss that sent his mind offline. Closing his eyes, Jauned wrapped his arms around Pyrrha as he enjoyed the kiss. But his eyes snapped open when Pyrrha moved her hands to his head while he felt her tongue against his lips. While he might not know everything, Jaune did know enough to know what to do next. He

opened his mouth, granting access to her tongue, turning the passionate kiss into a full-on make-out session that lasted a whole minute.

"Wow." Jaune said, dazed, as they separated.

"You have no idea how long I've wanted to do that." Pyrrha said with a dreamy smile.

"I can see that."

"And I look forward to doing that some more. But right now, we should head back to Beacon since it's starting to get late."

"Right. Should we get something for Nora and Ren?"

"Sure."

One Hour Later

"We're back." Jaune said as he and Pyrrha ented the dorm.

"And we got you two some ramen." Pyrrha said as she gave Ren and Nora their food.

"Thank you." Ren said, smirking as Pyrrha, Jaune, and Nora sat next to each other.

"So, how was your date with our hubby, Pyrrha?" Nora asked.

"The best." Pyrrha answered with a light blush.

"Did you-"

"Yes." Pyrrha said before leaning to kiss Jaune on the lips.

"Looks like you were right, Ren." Jaune said. "I owe you one."

"Anytime." Ren said. "So, what now? It's still a bit early to go to bed."

"We can watch a movie." Nora suggested.

"Actually. Before we do that. Jaune." Pyrrha said.

"Yes?"

"You said you were going to tell us the names of your other future wives."

"Oh, right." Jaune said as he got up and went over to his desk.

"Good thinking. We should know their names." Nora said, wiping her mouth with a napkin.

"Also. Do you two have anything planned for this week or next week?" Pyrrha asked.

"No." Ren answered.

"I'm free. But I would like to spend more alone time with Jaune." Nora said. "Why?"

"Jaune and I were talking a bit while we were eating, and we think it's a good idea for us to meet his parents. And, if possible, for him to meet our parents."

"I'm not sure about my parents. I would have to give them a call. But I would like to meet my parents. Sure." Nora said, with Ren agreeing.

"Alright. I have the contracts." Jaune said as he sat between Nora and Pyrrha.

"What are they?" Pyrrha asked.

"The first one is Arslan Altan." Jaune said, causing Pyrrha to cup her chin in thought.

"Do you know her, Pyrrha?" Ren asked.

"The name rings a bell. But I'm not sure. I might have just heard the name, and that's it." Pyrrha answered. "Who's next?"

"Ciel Soleil." Jaune answered.

"We don't know here." Nora said with Pyrrha shaking her head.

"Emerald Sustrai."

"Nope."

"May Zedong." Don't know her." Pyrrha said.

"Melanie and Miltia Malachite."

"Wait. Aren't those the two bouncers from the club Yang crashed?" Nora asked.

"Yes." Ren answered.

"So, that's you brought all those medical supplies." Pyrrha said.

"Yes and no. That's part of the reason. You'll both see soon enough."

"Next is Neon Katt."

"Don't know her." Nora said.

"Trivia Vanille."

"We don't know her." Pyrrha said.

"Reese Chloris."

"Maybe. But I'll have to check. The same with Arslan." Pyrrha said, racking her brain.

"Next is... Team Rwby."

"Team... Rwby?" Nora asked, surprised.

"All of them?" Pyrrha asked, equally shocked.

"Yes. All of them. Not only that, but I'm also marrying Winter Schnee, who is the sister of Weiss."

"Okay. We might need a few more supplies." Nora said, looking over the medical supplies.

"Who's next?" Pyrrha asked.

"Velvet Scarlatina."

"That's not bad. I heard she's nice. A bit timid and reserved, but nice." Nora said.

"It isn't. Well, not directly. It's whose last that's going to be a big problem." Ren said.

"Then what is?" Pyrrha asked, confused. However, before Jaune or Ren could answer, someone shouting got their attention while sending shivers down their spines.

"WHAT!?" The unmistakable voice of Coco Adel shouted. And from the tone, everyone could tell she was furious.

"This. This is going to be painful." Pyrrha and Nora said as they grabbed their weapons with one hand and Jaune's arms with the other.

Notes:

Another simple chapter for Pyrrha. Sorry for the delay in this chapter. Things came up.

I chose to make Pyrrha's and Nora's chapters first as they both love Jaune, and Jaune loved them back but didn't realize it. As such, it was easier and less chaotic for them since they already

knew each other. But the following chapters won't be so tame or easy for Jaune.

Also, for characters like the Malachite Twins and ones that are related, like Yang and Ruby, should they have their own chapters or share one?

And before I forget to put this. Nearly all of the other girls will take multiple chapters to fall for the knight. I think the correct term is slow burn but I'm not sure.

Here is the order of the future wives Jaune will meet. Should any of them switch spots?

The order: Coco. Neo. Emerald. Velvet. Blake. May. Winter. Weiss. Neon. Reese. Yang. Ruby. Arslan. Melanie and/or Miltia. Ciel.

Chapter 5

WAIT, WHAT! HOW MANY I'M MARRYING!?

Chapter 5: Furious Fashionista, A helpful Faunus, and the Revelation

"Should we leave?" Pyrrha asked.

"I think that would be for the best." Ren said.

"But where should we go?" Nora asked as they felt a cold chill spread throughout Beacon Academy.

"I'm not sure. I just know we should get Jaune as far away from Beacon and any place that sells clothes or accessories as possible." Pyrrha answered.

"And we should do so now." Nora said. Everyone nodded as they got up. But before they could head to the door, someone opened it. And it wasn't someone they were expecting.

Half an Hour Earlier

"Alright, everyone. That was a good day of training." Coco Adel said as she and her team relaxed in their dorm.

"Yeah. But now." Yatshuhasi said, stretching before lying on his bed. "We have a whole week to relax."

"Or to catch up on some assignments. And study for any future tests or assignments." Fox added.

"What about you, bun-bun?" Coco asked, looking toward her faunus partner that she saw as a sort of younger sister despite being the same age. And, like an older sister, Coco would destroy anything that even harmed a single hair on Velvet's head. "Any plans for the week?"

"No. Well, I might attend this workshop about photography in a few days."

"Is it safe?" Fox asked, worried.

"Do you want one of us to join you?" Yatshuhasi asked.

"It's safe. I checked, and I also asked Blake from Team Rwby if she knew about the place. And she said she knew the place and the instructor. Everything is safe. And, no. It's okay." Velvet answered.

"Alright. But let us know if you change your mind and want one of us to come with you." Coco said as she grabbed some clothes. "I'm going to take a quick shower."

"Alright." The others said as they watched Coco enter the bathroom and close the door. But as soon as they did, Fox and Yatshuhasi immediately turned to Velvet.

"Quick. While Coco is in the shower, what are you actually going to do, Velvet?" Yatshuhasi asked as he sat on his bed.

While they didn't like talking or hiding things from their leader, Yatshuhasi and Fox did so for Velvet's sake. And the reason this time was that they didn't want Velvet to suffer from Coco's constant teasing about her crush on Team Jnpr's leader. Fox and Yatshuhasi knew it would be brutal, not just because Coco loves to tease Velevt regardless of the situation but also because of how badly Velvet was crushing on Jnpr's leader. She even made a plush doll of him to sleep with at night.

"There's this workshop that's all about helping ones like me ask out our crush. I signed up so I could ask him out in time for this couple's picnic event happening next week." Velvet answered, blushing.

"Well, good luck, Velvet. You're going to need it since I overheard Team Rwby saying he is a bit dense-headed when it comes to female attention." Fox said.

"Thanks, Fox. I'm sure going to need it."

"But still. Do you want one of us to come with you to the workshop? Just to be safe, and so Coco doesn't get suspicious." Yatshuhasi asked.

"Yes, please. The last thing we need is Coco getting suspicious." Velvet said, smiling.

Meanwhile

"Too late for that, Bun-Bun." Coco said as she stepped away from the bathroom door.

While she didn't hear the entire conversation, Coco heard all she needed. And that was that Velvet was crushing on someone big time. This revelation meant three things were now on Coco's agenda. The first was to find out who Velvet was crushing on and see if they met her standards. After all, she couldn't let just anyone get into a relationship with her Bun-Bun. The second was to find a way to get them together, as Coco knew Velvet was incredibly shy. That is, if the person passed her test. However, the last thing was the most important one.

'Get ready, Velvet. As soon as I find out who you're crushing on, I'm going to tease you to no end. After all, what kind of leader would I be if I didn't help you out? And while it might not be biological, I do see you as a sort of younger sister. That makes me the older sister, meaning I HAVE to tease you relentlessly.'

Chuckling to herself, Coco turned on the shower and adjusted the temperature. Once it was hot enough, Coco undressed herself quickly before getting in. Relishing the warmth, Coco let the water melt away all the tension and dirt/sweat she had worked up during training and being a leader. While she might make it seem easy and inspiring, it was incredibly challenging. And a warm shower was just how Coco liked to end the days as it allowed her to actually relax.

'Ah. This is the perfect way to end the day. All that's missing is a nice cup of coffee.' Coco thought as she let the warm water wash the soap off her body.

But not for the first time, Coco wondered what it would be like to shower with a special someone. Washing each other's bodies and possibly getting a bit frisky afterward was something she always wanted to experience. But while Coco had been in a few relationships before, they never lasted longer than one date. However, that did not mean she wanted to rush into a new relationship. But that was if she was looking to get into one. Coco wanted to finish her time at Beacon Academy before even considering getting into a serious relationship.

'But that does not mean I will never get into one.' Coco thought as she turned off the shower. *'But first things first. I need to find out who captured my Bun-Bun's heart.'*

Grabbing a towel, Coco dried herself off before getting out of the shower. She then grabbed her clothes and began to change into them. Once done, she grabbed her stuff and was about to exit the bathroom but stopped once she realized that she nearly forgot her scroll. Going over to it, Coco was about to pocket it but stopped when it went off. Looking at the number, she smiled when she realized her mother was calling her.

"Hey, mom." Coco said, answering the call.

'Hey, dear. How's my fashionista doing?' Coco's mother asked. ***'Are you still up to date and keeping with all the trends?'***

"Of course. Although, I still need to get a few considering I needed to save up a bit more lien to afford them."

'I don't blame you. The prices of all the current trends have gone ridiculously high.'

"Not only them. But the prices for the bullets and dust I use for Gianduja are now borderline robbery."

'Honestly. How do the Council and retailers expect you and others to save them if you can't even afford ammunition or repairs for your weapons?'

"Right?" Coco said, rolling her eyes.

It honestly baffled Coco at how expensive things were getting. Thankfully, her team now had actual missions that paid them a semi-decent amount of lien. And as the days passed and the school year continued, they would get missions that paid even more lien. But this was because they were second-year students. Coco honestly felt terrible for first-years as they didn't have any missions and needed to get outside jobs for the needed lien to survive. However, classes and the teachers made that far more challenging than necessary.

"Anyway. Did you call to check on me, or did you need something, Mom?" Coco asked as she grabbed a towel to dry her hair, which she forgot.

'Sort of. I need to tell you something.'

"What is it?" Coco asked, curious while raising an eyebrow.

'Well, you're a big girl now. So I won't sugarcoat it. I'll just tell you directly.'

'Okay. What could this be? Mom has never said or begun anything like that before.' Coco wondered.

'Listen, dear. I know who you are. I know you take a lot after me. But you also take after your father.'

"What does that mean?"

'You have trouble finding a decent partner. Like your father, you, unfortunately, attract some of the worst kinds of partners.

Not only that, you scare off any halfway decent guy. I asked some of them why they ran off like cowards, and they said they didn't think they would be able to handle you and that you scared them shitless. I honestly think the Brothers above put a curse on us or are messing with us for some sick twisted kind of fun.'

"What are you getting at, Mom?" Coco asked, now annoyed and slightly insulted.

'What I am getting at, daughter, is that I don't want you to end up alone or get together with a shit partner. That almost happened to me. Thankfully, your father came when he did. So, I did what any concerned mother would do.'

"What's that?"

'I' called to tell you that you're in an arranged marriage with the son of some old customers/friends.'

Meanwhile

"Alright." Yatshuhasi said as they finished storing away all their books and supplies.

"Now we can relax. Hopefully, we didn't forget anything else." Velvet said as she sat on her bed.

"Hopefully. We could use some rest." Fox said as he lay down on his bed.

"But now what? We have a few hours before Coco's imposed curfew." Velvet asked. While Beacon didn't have an official curfew, students knew better to stay up late as the teachers would discreetly make them suffer for it the next day. However, despite this, Coco, being the leader, put into place a curfew for them.

"Maybe we can watch a movie. We have some popcorn we could make." Yatshuhasi answered.

"And we have some fresh coffee for Coco." Fox added.

"Alright. But what movie should we watch?" Velvet asked before quickly adding. "But please don't let it be horror."

"Of course, Velvet. We know you don't like horror movies." Yatshuhasi said.

"How about that new boxing-" Fox began, but a sudden shriek cut him off.

"WHAT!?" Coco shouted from the bathroom, startling everyone.

"What was that?" Fox nervously asked. And for good reason. Coco rarely ever got mad or raised her voice. Hell, the only times that Fox and the others recalled Coco getting mad was when Team Crdl was harassing Velvet. But even then, Coco managed to retain her composure for the most part. Whatever just happened must have been bad or shocking.

"I don't know." Yatshuhasi said, worried for her leader but also curious about what caused Coco to shout.

"Uh, Coco? Is everything alr-" Velvet began, walking to the bathroom. Only to jump back and out of the way when Coco burst out of the bathroom with the door swinging and hitting the wall hard enough to leave a noticeable crack.

"WHERE IS HE!?" Coco asked, furious.

"W-who?" Velvet nervously asked as she took a step back.

"ARC! JAUNE ARC! THE LEADER OF TEAM JNPR! WHERE IS HE?!"

"Uh. Why do you want to know where he is, Coco? And what happened?" Yatshuhasi asked as he stood between Coco and Velvet while trying to diffuse the situation or, at the very least, calm their leader and friend down. However, he took a step back as sweat formed on his forehead as pure rage emanated from Coco.

"TELL! ME! WHERE! HE! IS! RIGHT! NOW!" Coco seethed. "HE NEEDS TO PAY FOR DOING THIS!"

"Doing what? What did he do?" Velvet asked, genuinely confused. While, admittingly, she, Fox, and Yatshuhasi didn't know Jaune that well, they knew without a doubt that he was a kind person. Moreover, they were certain Jaune wouldn't actively try to mess with others.

"HE POTENTIALLY RUINED MY LIFE!"

"That doesn't sound like him at all. Granted, we don't know him that well. But if what some others say is true, that's like the complete opposite of something Jaune would do." Yatshuhasi said, thoroughly confused.

"WELL, THEY'RE WRONG! NOW! DO YOU KNOW WHERE HE IS?!"

"Yes. Before we got back, I heard him nearby. I asked him where he was going, and he answered that he needed to meet with some fourth-year students. He should be there near Team KYAK's dorm." Fox answered.

"Thanks. I'll be back soon." Coco said before dashing out of the room.

"Fox. Please tell me you don't actually know where he is." Yatshuhasi said, turning to him.

"I don't. But something isn't adding up. I might not know Jaune aside from a few details; this does not seem like something he would do.

Plus, I think Coco's anger is making her not think straight. Maybe this was just some confusion or misunderstanding." Fox said.

"But could have gotten Coco this mad?" Velvet asked. But before the others could answer, Velvet's faunus ears picked up someone faintly talking.

"Uh, Velvet? Do you hear something?" Yatshuhasi asked as Velvet headed into the bathroom.

"Yes." Velvet answered as she returned. And in her hands was Coco's scroll.

"Coco's scroll?" Yatshuhasi asked, surprised.

"Why did she-" Fox began, but a voice cut him off.

'Hello? Coco? Are you still there?'

"Hello? Who is this?" Yatshuhasi asked, taking the scroll from Velvet.

'I could ask the same for you. What are you doing with my daughter's scroll?'

"My name is Yatshuhasi. I am a member of Coco's team, Team CFVY."

'Oh, Yatshuhasi. Yes. My daughter told me about you three.' Coco's mother said, sounding relieved.

"Oh, sorry if this is personal. But what happened that got Coco so mad?" Velvet asked.

'Well, it is. But considering my daughter considers all of you close friends and have been a team for nearly a year and a half, I'll tell you. I know my daughter. And I want her to be happy. But I don't want her to end up alone or with some douchebag that claims to love her. It nearly happened before, and it nearly happened to me.'

"So what did you do?" Fox asked, curious.

'I got into contact with some old customers that are also friends. I knew them personally. They are some of the better people out there. I also know they raise their kids to be gentlemen/ladies and to respect everyone. So, I made an arranged contract with them to marry Coco to their son. Keep in mind this was made a while ago, and I snuck in the clause to terminate it should the son become an ass. But from what I've seen and heard, he turned out how I had hoped. And since it was time, I called Coco to tell her about it.'

"Okay. I can kind of see where you're coming from." Velvet said, shocked but sort of understanding her point of view.

"But I don't think that would have been enough to cause Coco to storm out and hunt down Jaune." Yatshuhasi said.

'Not enough to hunt him down. I knew she would have gotten angry. And I don't blame her. I know you three don't either. But I should have worded it better.'

"What do you mean?" Fox asked, confused.

'I never like to sugarcoat things. The only times I make an exception to that is when I'm talking to little kids. I prefer to say it how it is. You could say it's like the old expression of ripping it off like a band-aid. So, I told her that she was getting married in an arranged marriage. But I might have made it sound like I was just giving her away like I wanted to get rid of her. Or that I was forced into doing this to her. I'm not entirely sure. Just know that I wanted the best for her and didn't want her to end up like I almost did.'

"Yeah. That's most likely why Coco became furious. The wording." Fox said.

"But at least you chose a good guy. We don't know Jaune that well. But from what little we do know about him, we know that he is a great guy, nice, and humble." Yatshuhasi said.

'That's good. Some reassurance that I made a good call with him is always nice. And that while it might not be a loving marriage, it will at least be nice and not unpleasant.' Coco's mother said before sighing. ***'Anyway. Can you three do me a small favor?'***

"Sure. What is it?" Velvet asked.

'Can you try and calm my daughter down and prevent her from tracking down Jaune and hurting him?'

"Of course." Yatshuhasi answered.

'Thanks. And once you do, tell her to call me so I can explain everything.' Coco's mother said before ending the call.

"Well, our day just got busy with something we were not expecting." Fox said.

"Yeah." Velvet agreed, unsure of what to say or how to feel. On the one hand, she was glad that her leader was okay and wasn't in any danger. But on the other hand, she was upset that her leader would be the one getting together with her crush.

"Are you okay, Velvet?" Yatshuhasi asked.

"Yeah. Just... having some trouble processing this."

"That's understandable." Fox said.

"So, how should we stop Coco from taking out Jaune?"

"Coco is more likely to listen to you, Velvet. So you and Fox go find her and try to calm her down." Yatshuhasi answered.

"What will you do?" Fox asked.

"I'll go warn Team Jnpr. They need to know."

"I think it will also be good if you brought them into town. Just in case Coco finds them before we can get to her." Fox added.

"Right. Good idea. Let's go." Yatshuhasi said as they exited their dorm to chase after their leader and warn Team Jnpr.

Team JNPR's dorm

Five Minutes Later

"Yatshuhasi?" Team JNPR asked, surprised.

"Yes." Yatshuhasi said, panting. Despite being in great shape, he forgot how far the first-year dorms were from the second-year dorms.

"What are you doing here?" Jaune asked, curious while having an inkling about the answer.

"I came to warn you that Coco is on her way here. And she's furious."

"We know. We heard her scream from here." Nora said.

"Yeah. And you won't believe the reason."

"She's in an arranged marriage with me." Jaune said, surprising Yatshuhasi.

"Wait. How did-"

"I have the certificates." Jaune answered, showing Yatshuhasi the marriage contract between himself and Coco. However, what caught his attention were the others.

"But what about those other papers?" Yatshuhasi asked, pointing to the others.

"Yeah. Long story short, my parents put me into an arranged contract with not just one girl, but eighteen others." Jaune answered.

Silence.

"Uh-"

"Okay." Yatshuhasi said, laughing his off. "You are either the luckiest person on the face of Remnant or the unluckiest one."

"I know. Ren told me that two days ago." Jaune sighed while Nora, Ren, and Pyrrha chuckled.

"Do you at least know some of them?"

"A few."

"For starters." Pyrrha said, grabbing Jaune's arm.

"There's us." Nora said, doing the same.

"Well, at least you know them." Yatshuhasi said.

"And then there's Velvet from your team." Jaune said.

"Wait. Velvet?"

"Yes."

"Wasn't expecting that." Yatshuhasi said, surprised. And while it might not be ideal or 'conventional,' he was secretly glad Velvet would end up with her crush. However, they still had to find out if Jaune returned her feelings. But Yatshuhasi highly doubted that as they barely knew each other, let alone hung out even once. Maybe down the road, there's a slight chance that might change, but it was still a long shot.

"Me neither. And next is-"

BAM

"WHERE ARE YOU, ARC!?" Coco shouted, scaring them. While they didn't know how far she was, they knew she would find them if they stayed put.

"This might be redundant, but why is Coco so angry?" Ren asked.

"And isn't she normally great at controlling her emotions?" Pyrrha asked.

BAM

"WHERE ARE YOU?!"

"How about I-DUCK!" Yatshuhasi began before shouting and ducking when a piece of a wall came flying toward them. Thankfully, it seemed like Coco didn't find them yet and simply "threw it" out of her way. "How about I answer that while we're on the bullhead flying away from Beacon?" Yatshuhasi suggested.

"Sure." Team Jnpr answered, feeling the chill of death go down their spines when they heard the familiar sound of gunshots nearby.

Half an Hour Later

Vale

"So what caused Coco to become this furious?" Nora asked as they exited the bullhead. But even far from Beacon, they could still feel the occasional tremor.

"The arranged marriage. And yes. Coco's great at keeping her emotions in check. The only times we had seen Coco get angry was when Team Crdl harassed Velvet." Yatshuhasi answered.

"But that wouldn't be enough to cause her to go on a manhunt for Jaune." Pyrrha said, worried.

"Typically, no. But when Coco's mother called to tell Coco about the arranged marriage, she... didn't word it right. She even admitted that she could have worded it better."

"Yeah. That makes sense." Jaune said.

"How did you react when you learned about the arranged marriages?"

"Well, I was shocked. And I had a hard time processing it. But I wasn't angry. I was more worried about the others, considering this will change their lives."

"Really?"

"Yeah. Jaune was more worried about the others than himself." Pyrrha said.

"And he kept on thinking of ways to try to 'save' everyone else because he didn't want to ruin their lives despite not knowing about the marriages in the first place." Nora added.

"It took us a bit and a long talk to get Jaune to realize that it wasn't his fault and that we wanted this to happen." Pyrrha said, blushing.

"Well, our marriages after we learned about them. We're not sure about the others." Nora quickly added.

"Huh. I wasn't expecting that." Yatshuhasi said, secretly impressed and glad Velvet fell for someone with a conscious and morals instead of someone far less scrupulous.

"Anyway. So, where are we going?" Ren asked, snapping Yatshuhasi from his thoughts.

"There's this place I know of that's sort of hidden that not a lot of people know about. We can lay low there until Coco calms down."

"What then?" Pyrrha asked.

"Once Coco is calm enough, we'll explain everything and have her call her mother so she can explain the rest."

"Alright." Jaune said, still worried.

Nodding, Yatshuhasi motioned for Team Jnpr to follow him. They looked at each other before shrugging. While they didn't know outside of his name and what team he was on, they figured they could trust him. After all, the only other option was to find a place to hide from Coco and pray she didn't find them.

Running to catch up with Yatshuhasi, they followed him throughout Vale to the place he had in mind. However, instead of using the regular routes they would typically use, Yatshuhasi led them down some roads none of them had ever been on before. And the night sky with very limited lights made it slightly nerve-wracking. Thankfully, it only lasted about ten minutes as they soon reached an area where streetlights lit up the place properly. Unfortunately, like with life, once one problem leaves, a new one arrives to take its place. And in this instance, it was a few nighttime block parties.

"Great." Yatshuhasi said, sounding annoyed.

"Should we go around?" Nora asked, trying to see a way through. But there were just so many people that she could not see past ten feet.

"We can, but we need to get there as quickly as possible. And besides, even if we do take another, we will need to make a few more turns since the place is at the end of a pseudo cul de sac. Basically, there's only one way to it."

"Alright." Ren said, slightly annoyed as he had never been too fond of crowds.

"I just wish I brought me-" Pyrrha began but stopped when Jaune placed a hat on her.

"I grabbed these guys before we left. I didn't know where we were going and didn't want to take the chance of people swarming you again." Jaune said as he adjusted the hat before placing sunglasses on her, followed by a red scarf.

"Thanks, Jaune." Pyrrha said, blushing before pecking him on the lips.

'Velvet definitely made the right choice in falling for Jaune.' Yatshuhasi said, smiling. "Come on. We better hurry. Hopefully, Velvet and Fox are almost done calming Coco down."

Nodding, they followed Yatshuhasi through the crowd of partiers. But they made a conscious effort to stay as close together as possible. However, this proved far more challenging than they initially thought, as there were so many people they had trouble keeping track of each other as they pushed through the crowd. And if they weren't currently trying to escape a potentially painful experience, they would have questioned why there was a block party this late at night.

'Damn it.' Jaune thought as he struggled to keep up or keep track of the others.

But try as he might, Jaune completely lost sight of them after a couple of minutes. And while he would have typically just called them, he forgot his scroll in the dorm as they were in a rush. And judging by how the ground shook slightly, and not because of the people partying, Jaune knew it was unwise to return to Beacon. Sighing, he moved to a nearby bench that was somehow still intact and empty.

"Great. Now what?" Jaune asked himself as he pondered his next move. While he could try and find the others, he knew it was too much of a longshot. The best he could do would be to try and find another location to lay low until his friends found him or until he believed Coco calmed down enough to listen to him. "But where should I go?"

"Definitely not a coffee shop or clothes store." A voice answered, startling him.

"Velvet?" Jaune asked, surprised to see her here.

"That's me." Velvet said, smiling as she sat next to Jaune. However, it took an incredible amount of will for her not to become a stuttering mess and to appear casual.

"What are you doing here?" Jaune asked before realizing that may have come out wrong. "I-it's not that I d-don't mind seeing you. B-but I thought-"

"Thought that I was at Beacon trying to calm down Coco?"

"Y-yes. Sorry if that came out wrong." Jaune said, blushing.

"It's fine. I would have asked the same thing if I were in your position." Velvet assured while trying to calm her beating heart down. It was racing from being so close to her crush. For a moment, Velvet had to remind herself that she was here for a reason and not to ask her crush out on a date, even though she knew her leader would become his future wife due to the arranged marriage.

"So, uh. Did you manage to calm Coco down?"

"No. Fox and I caught up to her, but we failed to calm her down. We tried to do so again, but she realized you weren't at Beacon and took a bullhead here."

"Oh, this isn't good. Do you know where she is? And what about Fox?" Jaune asked, worried.

"Fox is back at Beacon. He's in our dorm cleaning up some of the mess and volunteered to help Glynda clean up some of the destruction Coco caused. As for Coco, I don't know where she is exactly, but I know where she is heading."

"Where?"

"The same place Yatshuhasi was taking you and the rest of your team."

"WHAT!?"

"Yeah. We all know the place, but we don't go there often. That's why Yatshuhasi planned on bringing all of you there."

"WE HAVE-"

"Don't worry about your friends, Jaune. Coco is after you and not your friends. And besides, Yatshuhasi can easily handle Coco. But I highly doubt that it would come to that point."

"That's a relief."

"But that doesn't mean we're out of the woods yet. Coco is still mad and after you."

"Right. I need to find a place to hide." Jaune said, placing his head in his palms.

"Don't worry, Jaune. That's why I came to find you. To warn you that Coco knows where you are heading and to take you someplace else. Somewhere where she hopefully won't find us."

"Thanks, Velvet." Jaune said, smiling, causing Velvet to blush bright red like a tomato.

"N-no problem." Velvet said, looking away.

"So, where is it?"

"Follow me."

Nodding, Jaune got up and followed Velvet away from the crowds. But as they did, Jaune made a mental note to find this place when it was daytime and to find a payphone to call his friends and tell them they were okay. Yet, as they left, they failed to notice a pair of eyes following them. Once they were satisfied, they left to inform their boss about what they found.

Ten Minutes Later

"So. Uh. How was your day?" Jaune asked, unsure of what to say. While he didn't mind the silence, he felt like he needed to say something.

"It was fine. A little tiresome but otherwise, alright." Velvet answered, glad that Jaune had started a conversation. But also internally cursed when she gave a curt answer. Thankfully, it seemed like Jaune had an idea of how to continue the conversation until they arrived.

"Any plans for the vacation?"

'Not that question. Okay. Play it cool, Velvet. And maybe, once this is done, you can ask him out.' Velvet thought, thankfully not blushing. "Not really. Maybe my team will go out and spend the day together. But that is if Glynda doesn't give Coco the detention of a lifetime."

"Yeah. I bet Goodwitch was furious."

"She was." Velvet chuckled. "Anyway. What about you?"

"Well, I'm not sure either, considering I was not expecting the arranged marriages. But if nothing else comes up, I might go and

visit my parents with my teammates." Jaune said, accidentally slipping up.

"Wait. What? Marriages? As in more than one?" Velvet asked, shocked and wondering if she heard right. But, internally, she wondered and slightly hoped that she was one of the contracts if it was true.

"Ah, no. Uh, no. One. Just one marriage. A simple slip of the tongue." Jaune quickly said, hoping Velvet would not call his bluff.

"Oh. I thought so. I can't imagine what it would be like to marry multiple people because of an arranged marriage, let alone ones you don't know too well."

'You don't know the half of it. I just hope you don't freak out when I tell you that you're one of the people I'm going to marry in an arranged marriage.' Jaune nervously thought, thankfully able to keep a blush from forming on his face. However, it did form when he saw a sign he wasn't expecting. "Uh, Velvet."

"Yes?"

"Is this the place?" Jaune asked, pointing to the sign. Looking toward where he was pointing, Velvet blushed furiously.

It was the sign of a Love Hotel.

"W-what? No. T-that's not it. The place is a few blocks down." Velvet stuttered.

"Oh. Okay." Jaune said, relieved.

"Yeah. I didn't even know this place was here."

"Maybe it recently opened."

"Probably." Velvet said while making a mental note to find this place's website so she could book a date for her and Jaune. Well,

after they get into a relationship.

"Are you okay, Velvet?" Jaune asked, snapping her from her thoughts.

"Huh?"

"Your face became all red all of a sudden."

"Oh. I'm fine. My mind just went to Coco and how she would have teased me relentlessly if she saw this place."

"I take it she loves to tease you."

"Oh, you have no idea. Any chance she has to tease me, she takes it. You can't begin to imagine what's it like to be on the receiving end of someone who loves to tease you."

"Oh contraire, Velvet. I grew up with seven sisters. I know what's it like to be on the receiving end of constant teasing." Jaune said, surprising Velvet.

"SEVEN SISTERS!"

"Yup. My parents always wanted a big family." Jaune said, smiling. *'But the family is about to get a lot bigger because of the contracts.'*

"And now they got it." Velvet said, blushing at the thought of having some kids in the future with Jaune. While Velvet wasn't sure how many she wanted, she knew she wanted a lot. But first things first, they needed to get into a relationship first. But that was if Jaune returned her feelings or was willing to date her.

"Yup." Jaune chuckled.

"Anyway. We're here." Velvet said as they stopped in front of a two-story building.

"Uh?" Jaune asked, confused, as what was in front of him was a motel.

"Don't worry, Jaune. The owner is an old family friend. He lets me stay here whenever I need to get away from Beacon life for a while." Velvet said, smiling.

"Alright." Jaune said, still usnure.

"Come on." Grabbing Jaune's hand, Velvet led Jaune inside the motel. And once they entered, Jaune noticed that it was surprisingly furbished.

"Wow." Jaune said, surpsied. While he hadn't been to too many motels, most of them had been in terrible condition. This one gave off a homey feeling.

"That was my reaction too."

"Velvet? Is that you?" A voice asked.

"Is that-" Jaune began before trailing off when he spotted the tall, muscular male behind the counter. He had an eyepatch on his right eye, a white sailor cap, a pipe in his mouth, and tattoos on his forearms.

"Hey, Douglas." Velvet said, smiling.

"Hey, Velvet. Glad to see you again." Douglas said before turning to Jaune. "And who's this?"

"This is Jaune. He's a friend from Beacon."

"Alright." Douglas said, eyeing Jaune, causing him to become nervous. "Anyway. Why are you here, Velvet?"

"We need a place to lay low because of... things. Honestly, it's a little hard to believe. We just need a place to stay for the night."

"Okay. You two can head to your usual room. It's all set and ready. But no funny business, or else." Douglas warned Jaune.

"Right. You don't need to worry." Jaune nervously said.

"Good. If you need me, I'll be in my office." Douglas said before leaving.

"Uh-"

"Don't worry about him, Jaune. He's just slightly protective of me." Velvet assured.

"Right." Jaune said, unconvinced.

"Let's head to the room." Velvet said as she led him to their room.

Five Minutes Later

"So, uh. What now?" Jaune asked as he looked around the room. It was a relatively simple room.

There were two twin-sized beds, a tv, a closet, and a bathroom with a shower. But Jaune quickly saw a problem arise. While he was used to sleeping with others, considering he shared a room with his team and grew up with seven sisters, Jaune was unsure about sleeping in the same room as Velvet. And there were two reasons for this. The first was that he barely knew Velvet. And the second was Coco, as he didn't want any more miscommunications tonight. Honestly, he already had enough to last a lifetime.

"We rest a bit. Maybe a watch a movie and then head to sleep. By tomorrow, Coco would mostly likely be calm enough for us to explain everything." Velvet answered as she sat on her bed.

"Hopefully, she doesn't find us until tomorrow. I could use some sleep." Jaune said. However, no soon than he said this, a chilling voice caught their attention.

"Too late for that, blondie." The voice said. Turning to where it came from, Velvet and Jaune saw Coco standing next to a closed and locked exit.

"COCO!?" Velvet asked, shocked to see her leader here.

"Hey, bun-bun." Coco said in a strangely calm tone that sent shivers down Jaune's spine.

"How did you find us?"

"We've been teammates for nearly a year and a half now. Not to mention, I'm your friend and team leader. You don't think I wouldn't have been curious or concerned every time you left Beacon for the weekend when something happened?" Coco asked, raising an eyebrow.

"Reminds me a lot of Amber." Jaune quietly said but went silent when Coco glared at him.

"Oh, right." Velvet said, surprised she forgot how caring Coco was of her teammates.

"Now, if you will excuse me, Velvet. I need to have a *LONG* talk with Arc." Coco said, cracking her knuckles.

"W-wait." Jaune nervously said, holding up his hands. While he might have gotten better at fighting thanks to Pyrrha, Nora, and occasionally Yang, Jaune knew he was no match for Coco. Although, he wasn't sure if it was a blessing or a curse that Coco didn't have her weapon on her.

"Any last words, Arc?" Coco asked, reaching Jaune, grabbing his shirt, and lifting him off the floor. And because of how close they were, Jaune could smell her perfume. And, honestly, he wasn't surprised that it was latte scented.

"C-can we j-just talk about this beforehand?"

"What's there to talk about? YOU PROBABLY DERAILED MY LIFE WITH THIS CONTRACT!" Coco shouted before punching the wall right next to Jaune's head, leaving a sizable hole.

"That's a pretty big claim." Jaune said, surprised Coco thought that. But then again, he couldn't blame her. After all, Jaune thought the same until Pyrrha and Nora convinced him otherwise. And even after their talk, he still felt like that a little bit. "But I didn't even know about the contracts until two days ago. Heck, I didn't know who you were or that you existed until two months ago. That probably came out wrong."

"No. It came out mostly right." Velvet said, thinking it over. While it might have seemed harsh, it was true. They didn't know Jaune's name until about a month and a half ago. Well, for the others, anyway. Velvet learned about him the second month into the year, although she would never admit to that.

"She's right. But still, a month is more than enough." Coco growled.

"Maybe. But I HAD NO PART IN THEM!" Jaune shouted, hoping it would get through to Coco.

"He's right, Coco. Not only did he have no part in them, he didn't know about them at all." Velvet added.

"I doubt that." Coco growled as she raised her fist with the intent to punch Jaune in the face and through the wall.

"WAIT!" Velvet shouted.

"What is it, Velvet?" Coco asked, turning to her. Instead of answering, Velvet showed her the marriage contract between her and Jaune.

"The marriage contract between you and Jaune. It fell out of his pocket when he stepped back."

"Let me see that." Coco said, swiping the contract before turning back to Jaune and letting him go. "My mom only told me about this marriage contract a few hours ago. When, where, and how did you get this already?"

"Like I said, I only learned about these two days ago. And I learned about them when I received them in a letter from the Vale City's Clerk's Office." Jaune answered.

"The Vale City's Clerk's Office?" Coco asked, confused and slightly surprised. "Your family didn't give you the contract?"

"Yeah. I was packing up some things to send to my family and sisters. And after dropping them off in the mailroom, I picked up my team's mail. After sorting through them, I found the letter from Vale City's Clerk's Office that contained the contracts."

"And what did you think when you first saw the contract?" Coco asked as she looked over the contract. While she might not be as familiar with contracts as some people that major in them in different schools, she does have enough experience to find loopholes and sneaky clauses.

"I thought they were fake."

"Fake?" Velvet asked, confused.

"Yeah, fake. I thought my sister, Esmerelda, was playing a prank on me again. She loves playing pranks on the family, but more specifically, me. And she's excellent at forging papers. Honestly, it's a shocker that she didn't go into the forensics field or something similar since they could really use her skills." Jaune explained.

"But how did you find out there weren't?" Coco asked.

"Was it the seals?" Velvet asked.

"No. Well, partially. But what made me doubt that Esmerelda made them were the signatures. Esmerelda doesn't have the greatest penmanship, and my parents use a very fine cursive. So fine that it's kind of hard to read."

"Yeah. I see that. Their names are Auro and Josh?" Coco asked, impressed at the penmanship. While she hadn't finished reading the contract, she looked down at the signature out of curiosity. And during her time at Beacon, Coco had seen terrible and excellent penmanship. But this. This was something else. She could hardly make any of the letters out.

"No. My mom's name is Aurelia, and my father's name is Jett."

"Continue."

"After seeing the signatures, I called my parents."

"What did they say?" Velvet asked, curious.

"They tried to skirt around it and act like they didn't know about it. But they told me they knew about it and that the contracts were made about a decade ago or more."

"A decade ago?" Velvet asked, surprised.

"Yup."

"Did they try ever try to cancel them?"

"They did. But they said both parties must consent to cancel the contract in for the contract to be null. But while my parents wanted to cancel it, they said all the others didn't."

"Wow." Velvet said, shocked.

"Yeah."

"What do you think, Coco?" Velvet asked, turning to her leader. But she became slightly worried when she noticed Coco with a guilty expression on her face. "Coco?"

"It's a lot to take in. But it seems like Arc is right." Coco sheepishly said.

"How so?"

"My mom is always cautious. Whenever she makes an agreement with someone or some company, she always wants it in writing so she can make it favor her or so she can escape it in case things go south. But she always writes it in such a way that most wouldn't see it unless they know what they are looking for. And I found the clause that would nullify the contract if things didn't turn out how she envisioned. And it's worded exactly how she would have done it."

"Reall?" Jaune asked, surprised.

"Yes. It says, and I quote: Once both parties reach the agreed-upon age, the male will undergo third-party evaluations to avoid biased outcomes and to determine if the male has retained/achieved the values the Adel family wanted. If the outcome values have been attained/retained, the marriage will proceed. If not, the marriage contract will be nullified, and both parties will go forward as if nothing has ever happened."

"Oh, wow. I didn't know that. Nor did I know that I was evaluated at some point." Jaune said, surprised.

"My mother probably called in some favors for that part. And they probably spied on you from far away for a while." Coco explained. "But this, along with what you said, means that you had no part in it. Sorry, Arc."

"It's...fine. Honestly, I kind of expected it. And I don't blame you for wanting to strangle me." Jaune said.

"Strangle you? I didn't know you had that kink, Arc." Coco said, smirking, causing both Velvet and Jaune to blush furiously.

"W-what? I-I d-don't-"

"Calm down, Arc. I'm just messing with you. I couldn't help myself making that joke."

"Okay." Jaune said, calming down. "And you don't need to call me by my last name. You can call me Jaune if you want."

"I prefer Arc since we aren't on a first-name basis yet. But you can still call me Coco if you want." Coco said.

"True. And thanks."

"But anyway. I'm sorry I chased you and nearly ended your life in a blind fit of rage when you had no part in it."

"It's fine, Coco. Like I said, I expected it, to be honest. And I'm pretty sure the others would do the same. This is something that can derail anyone's life and make them feel like you did. And I would be genuinely shocked if one wouldn't be surprised or furious." Jaune said while mentally, including the exception of Pyrrha and Nora.

"True." Coco sighed. "I just can't believe my mother gave me away like this."

"I don't think-"

"Wait. That reminds me." Velvet interjected, getting their attention.

"What is it, Bun-Bun?" Coco asked.

"After you left the dorm to try and find Jaune, you left your scroll behind. And your mom was still on the line. She asked us to tell you to call her once you calmed down. She said she wanted to explain to you everything and fix how she said it."

"Oh, shit. I forgot about her. I got so angry that I didn't bother listening to everything she said." Coco said, now slightly worried and guilty for not letting her mother finish. "I should call her, but I don't have my scroll on me."

"That's alright. I brought it with me." Velvet said, handing Coco her scroll.

"Thanks, Velvet. I'll be right back. I need to make this call." Coco said before exiting the room.

"That was too close." Jaune said once the door closed.

"It was. But luckily, Coco calmed down once she realized you had no part of it." Velvet agreed.

"Yeah." Jaune said, shifting uncomfortably. "So, uh-"

"How about we watch something on the TV while we wait for Coco to finish her call? Then we can figure out what to do next."

"Sure." Jaune answered while mentally wondering when he could tell Velvet she was also going to marry him in an arranged marriage.

Fifteen Minutes Later

"Alright. Sorry it took so long. My mom had a lot to tell me." Coco said as she entered the room and closed the door behind her.

"It's fine." Velvet said as they paused the movie.

"How did it go?" Jaune asked.

"Well. It went better than I expected. And my mom wanted to make sure I understood completely why she did this." Coco said as she sat down next to Velvet.

"And?" Velvet asked.

"It's a lot. While I understand why she did this, I don't entirely agree with this. I honestly would have preferred to find someone myself."

"If that's the case, maybe we can nullify the contract." Jaune suggested.

"How?" Velvet asked, confused.

"In the contract, it said that if I don't meet or have the values, then the contract would be void. Maybe we can do something so that it seems like I don't have those values. That way, the marriage doesn't have to go through."

"That could-"

"That won't work." Coco interjected.

"Why?" Velvet asked.

"To keep it simple, my mother put in a condition where neither party can tell their kids. That way, *WE* , can't do something to try and mess with it or try to nullify it. Basically, even if we try Arc's plan, it won't work because our parents would know something is up. And the date is already agreed upon, so doing this won't affect anything."

"I wasn't expecting that." Velvet said before lighting up. "What about a divorce? After you two get married, you can file for a divorce."

"That would entirely depend on Coco." Jaune said, confusing Velvet.

"What do you mean?"

"Well. Every kingdom, village, and possibly family has different views of marriage and divorce. Mine is pretty open-minded about them. However, not all families are like that. And most of the time, there is a heavy negative stigma associated with divorce. And the last thing I want is for Coco to go through with that. I don't care if that happens to me; I just don't want Coco or the others to suffer from that stigma."

"Wow. You always put others before you, Arc. Most would not have cared about the other." Coco said, impressed.

"It's the right thing to do. While it might backfire at times, I rather deal with the consequences than let others suffer."

"Now that's nice."

"Is there a stigma for divorce in your family, Coco?" Velvet asked.

"Not really. There were some families in the town I grew up in that had something like that. But there were none in my family." Coco answered after thinking it over. "But I don't think a divorce would solve anything since my mom will probably just do it again."

"So what do you want to do?" Jaune asked, curious.

"I'm not sure. But for now, let's just let it happen. Honestly, at the very least, I know your name and know that you're a Beacon student, albeit a not-so-good one. No offense."

"None taken." Jaune chuckled.

"But still. I think it's better to marry someone that you at least know their name rather than somebody you know nothing about. Again, no offense if there was any in there."

"I don't think there was. But either way, I'm with you. It's better someone that you somewhat know rather than a mysterious figure." Jaune agreed. "But. Uh. What should- How should we proceed? And what about after the marriage?"

"I'm not sure. But we could at least try to be friends instead of people we heard of. And maybe after the marriage, uh, we can be slightly better friends. Sorry, but that's all that is coming to my mind at the moment. Maybe something better will come down the road, but for now, that's all I got."

"Yeah. Same." Jaune said before muttering. "And hopefully, the others will think the same."

"What was that, Jaune?" Velvet asked, taken aback by what she heard.

"Uh. Nothing. I said nothing." Jaune quickly answered.

"No, you definitely said something along the lines of some others thinking the same." Velvet said. "Who are the others?"

"N-no one. I don't know no others."

"Wait. I just realized something." Coco said, causing Jaune to stiffen.

"What's that?"

"A couple of times, you said others. You also used the plural form a couple of times with the contract. And you also never said contract; you always said contracts." Coco answered. "What's going on, Arc?"

"Something that both Ren from my team and your teammate, Yatshuhasi, told me." Jaune answered as he reached for the contracts. But before he could pull them out, Velvet's scroll went off.

"I wonder who's calling me?" Velvet asked as she took out her scroll. However, she smiled when she realized who was calling her. "MOM!"

'Hi, sweety. How's my precious little cinnamon bun?' Meg Scarlatina asked.

"I'm doing great."

"Should we exit the room?" Jaune quietly asked Coco. Coco raised her hand, but before she could say anything, Meg spoke up.

'Is that Coco, dear?'

"Yes, mom. Coco's here with me."

"Hello, Ms. Scarlatina." Coco said.

'Hello, Coco. How have you been?'

"Well. That's a bit tough to answer. But I would say not... bad."

'Well, hopefully, everything gets better. But, uh, dear. Did I also hear a boy's voice?' Meg asked. But the tone made Velvet worried for her mother.

"Yes. But mom, is everything alright?" Velvet asked.

'Answer me this first. Is he a friend or something more?'

"He's a friend." Velvet answered. And for a moment, Jaune wondered why Velvet sounded downtrodden at that. "Why?"

'Well, you see, dear. There is something your father and I did a while back before we split up. And it involves you.'

"What did you do?" Velvet asked, curious.

'Well. Keep in mind that we did this for you, Velvet. We wanted you to have a beautiful life and a happy marriage with someone that can give you the life you deserve. And possibly a lot of children. But we were worried that something might happen or someone might pressure you into an unhappy marriage. We couldn't bear to see that happening. So we agreed to do something about it.'

"A-and w-what's that?" Velvet asked, worried while feeling her heart break slightly at the thought of never being able to be with her crush.

'Your father called up some childhood friends that he was still in contact with. He said they were great people and were some of the most respectable people out there that even Ghira Belladonna, the chieftain of Menagerie, would like them. When I heard this, I didn't believe him. But once I met them, his words

didn't do them justice about how nice, respectable, and humble they are.'

"A-and?"

'We put you into an arranged marriage with them. And the other party should have or will soon receive the marriage contract.' As soon as Velvet heard this, Velvet felt her whole world shatter.

"Uh. Who is the person Velvet is going to marry?" Coco asked when she noticed that Velvet was still stiff as a board. And she didn't need any words or signs to know that Velvet felt devastated at the moment.

'The boy's name is Arc. Jaune Arc.'

"WHAT!?" Coco asked, shocked and slightly furious again. But shock and confusion quickly overcame furious. While she had heard about polyamorous relationships and arranged marriages before, Coco had never heard of multiple arranged marriages with the same guy. And she also wondered why her mother didn't mention this. *'Just another question I have to ask her and Jaune later.'*

'Yes. His name is-'

"YES!" Velvet cheered, surprising everyone. However, once she remembered she wasn't alone, Velvet blushed and sat back down.

'I take it you know who Jaune is, dear.'

"Yes. He's a friend. He is also a huntsman-in-training. Although he is a year below me."

'That's great, dear. It really is that you know him. Now, it won't be as awkward.' Meg said. And even though they were talking over their scrolls, she could tell that her daughter had a big crush on Jaune. But it was also enough for Coco to know that it was Jaune that Velvet was crushing on.

"Uh. Would he know about the marriage?" Coco asked, eyeing Jaune, who was shifting uncomfortably.

'Yes. His parents messaged me and the others that he received the letters from Vale's City Clerk's office. Granted, we wished they would have sent it earlier, but I guess even in Vale, the mail is inefficient beyond belief. And in case you were wondering why we waited so long to tell any of you, we all agreed to wait until everyone is of age and the Clerk's Office sent the letters.'

"Yeah, that's true about the mail. But what did you mean by others? How many are there in total?" Coco asked, curious. While she wouldn't admit it yet, she was slightly worried for Arc as he seemed like the guy who would give it his all in a relationship. And if there were a lot, he could burn himself out trying to make everyone happy.

'Well, including you, Coco, and Velvet, there are a total of eighteen contracts.'

"EIGHTEEN!?" Velvet and Coco shouted, shocked. Turning to Jaune, they saw him nod while taking out some of the contracts.

'Yes.'

"Wait. How did you know I was one of them?" Coco asked.

'Oh. That's easy. Well, somewhat easy. While we don't know all of the other parties personally, we know their names and their daughters. And when Velvet told me who was on her team last year, I instantly recognized your last name and that you were one of the people that will be marrying Jaune Arc.'

"So, we're all going to be marrying Jaune Arc."

'Pretty much. But all the families have their own reasons for this. Although I do believe one or two of them were similar to my reason. But I'm not too sure.'

"Well. This is... something." Coco said, trying to process this while feeling that her reason to be furious was now even less warranted. Yes, she did feel like her life was derailed because of the arranged marriage. But once Coco calmed down, she figured they could somewhat make it work and act like they weren't married and be just friends living under one roof. However, Coco felt like Jaune could now deservingly say that his life was derailed, considering how many he would be marrying.

'Yeah. It's never been done before. But I'm confident all of you can make it work. And if Jaune can handle growing up with seven mischievous sisters, I'm sure he can handle this. Anyway, I have to go now. Talk to you later, sweetie. Bye.'

Click

Silence.

"Uh." Jaune said, unsure of what to say to break the silence.

"I pity you, Arc. I mean it. I genuinely feel sorry for you." Coco said.

"Uh, thanks... I guess?"

"So how are you going to do this? And do you know any of them?"

"I have no idea. And I know a few of them. They are Team Rwby, Nora and Pyrrha from my team, and you and Velvet. Everyone else, I don't know. And I think two of them are technically criminals."

"Do any know about this?"

"Well, Pyrrha and Nora know about it. The others, I'm not sure. But they should be receiving the news soon."

"How did they take it?"

"Far better than I expected. And some... really nice revelations came from it." Jaune answered. And the blush was all Coco needed to

know what Jaune meant by nice revelations.

"Well, good luck to you." Coco said before turning to Velvet, who still seemed to be radiating with joy. "I take it Jaune was the one you had a crush on, Velv."

"YES!" Velvet shouted before blushing furiously. She then sat back down before replying in a meek voice. "Yes."

"What do you think of Velvet, Arc?" Coco asked, eyeing him as she reverted back to being protective of Velvet.

"Well. She is a good friend... I guess." Jaune answered before quickly adding. "She's great and nice. But remember, we don't know each other that well, if at all."

"Be lucky that is true; otherwise, you'd be in the ground right now."

"B-but that could change, right, Jaune?" Velvet asked, feeling torn between being devastated and acknowledging that Jaune was right. She only knew a few things about Jaune, while he only knew her name and that she was a second-year student that used to get bullied. While it could be argued that some people had gone on dates before without knowing much about their partner, they still knew *SOMETHING* about them. And that could not be said about her and Jaune.

"Of course. Anything can change with time." Jaune said after carefully choosing his words.

"True." Coco agreed while wondering what she should do next.

Coco did say that she would help Velvet get together with her crush after finding out who it was and if they met her standards. But that just got a lot more complicated, primarily because of the marriage contract. However, that did not mean she wouldn't evaluate Jaune to see if he was worthy of dating her best friend. It didn't matter what others thought; Coco needed to see *FIRSTHAND* if Jaune was good

enough for Velvet. And if he weren't, well, she would find a way to get Velvet out of the contract. But if he were, then Coco would give them her 'blessing' and maybe help them get closer together. Well, if Jaune eventually returned her feelings. That is *IF* he knew what was good for him.

However, where did that leave her? While she wouldn't mind getting into a relationship and possibly sharing the person with her bun-bun, this wasn't how she wanted to get into one. But seventeen others, she wasn't sure about that, let alone if the others were *WILLING* to share. Some might be jealous and try to sabotage the marriages or try to find a way to keep Arc to themselves. However, there was another thing. And, as Coco told Arc a few moments ago, *SHE* wanted to be the one to find and get into a relationship on her own terms. While Jaune was a nice guy, from what she had heard at least, he didn't seem to be her type, although that could be because she didn't know anything about him. And, like he said, that could change over time. But Coco doubted it. Nevertheless, she could at least give it a chance.

'It might not work out, but at least we could become good friends, which would make things less awkward once we get married. But I should be grateful that Mom chose someone that's nice and has morals. I could have easily ended up with someone that's sleazy and an ass like Cardin or some of the people we met on missions.' Coco thought.

"Coco? Are you okay?" Jaune asked, sounding worried.

"Huh? What was that?" Coco asked, snapping back to focus.

"You were gone for a moment. Is everything okay?" Velvet asked.

"Yeah, I'm fine. Just something on my mind."

"The marriage?" Jaune asked.

"Yeah, but don't worry about it."

"Alright. But if you ever need help, I'm willing to lend a hand or an ear."

"I'll keep that in mind."

"So, what now?" Velvet asked.

"There's still a lot to go over. But I think we should leave that for later." Jaune answered with a yawn.

"Later? Don't you mean tomorrow?" Coco asked.

"I would say yes, but it is already tomorrow." Jaune said, pointing to the clock next to the TV that read 2:00 AM.

"Wow, it's late. We better get back to Beacon." Coco said, shocked that it was already the next day.

"Yeah. Glynda is going to be furious that we're out past curfew." Jaune added, not looking forward to the potential detention.

"Curfew? There's no- Oh, right. I somehow forgot you're a first-year student." Coco said.

"What do you mean?"

"We'll let you in on a little secret, Jaune. There is no curfew." Velvet answered.

"Really?" Jaune asked, surprised.

"Yup. That's just something the faculty tells first-year students, so there are no late-night parties, and they can actually get some proper rest. But don't let that fool you. If any of the teachers learn that you were up late last night without a good reason, they will make you suffer for it the next day." Coco answered.

"I can imagine." Jaune said, glad he still followed the sleep schedule his mother put him on when he was younger. "But I should probably

not tell my teammates that."

"Why not?" Coco asked, raising an eyebrow.

"Pyrrha and Ren both try to fall asleep early so they can have a full eight hours of sleep. However, Nora tries to stay up as late as she can. And she only follows the curfew because she doesn't want to get in trouble with Glynda."

"I guess we both got lucky since my team follows the curfew I set, and you only have one that begrudgingly follows it." Coco said.

"True."

"But anyway. We should probably get going-" Coco began but stopped when Velvet's scroll went off again.

"Who is it this time?" Jaune asked.

"It's Fox." Velvet answered. "Hello."

'Velvet. Did you find Jaune?'

"Yes, we found Jaune. And he's still alive."

'That's good. What about Coco?'

"Long story short, she's calmed down. And she knows it's not Jaune's fault."

'Good. Where are you?'

"We're in a motel room that Velvet room at the moment. And it's not what you think." Coco answered.

'Alright.'

"Is everything okay on your end, Fox?" Velvet asked.

'More or less. I just finished fixing our dorm.'

"That's good." Coco said. "Anyway. We're heading back now. We'll see you soon."

'Uh. You might want to stay there for the night.'

"Why?" Velvet asked.

'Let's just say Glynda is the most furious we've seen her this month. Ozpin even had to ask Peach to make something to calm her down. You should probably stay at the motel room for the night and return when Glynda calms down; otherwise, things might not end well. And when you return, you should probably get ready for a long detention.'

"I'm not looking forward to it. But I deserve it." Coco said with a sigh. "Anyway. Thanks for telling us. We'll see you tomorrow."

'Alright. Good night.' Fox said before ending the call.

"I'm not looking forward to that." Coco said, rubbing her face.

"Maybe we can try and explain it once Glynda calms down, so it won't be as bad." Jaune suggested.

"It doesn't hurt to try, but I doubt it will work." Coco said with a yawn.

"So, how should we make this work?" Velvet asked.

"Make what work?" Jaune asked.

"The sleeping arrangement."

"Oh, that's easy. You and Coco get the beds. And I'll sleep on the chair."

"Really?" Coco asked.

"What? You two deserve to be comfortable. Velvet helped me, so it's the least I can do. And I caused you enough trouble, so."

"You know we... can possibly ask Douglas for another mattress or sleeping bag." Velvet began before remembering Coco wouldn't allow her to share a bed with Jaune. Well, at least not yet.

"It's fine." Jaune said.

"That can't be comfortable." Coco said.

"It's not. But I'm used to it."

"Really? How?"

"Let's just say some... antics from my team and my sisters back home caused us to... improvise our sleeping arrangments. And let's leave it at that." Jaune explained, remembering the times Nora, his team, and/or Team Rwby accidentally destroyed a part of the dorm or their beds.

"Alright. But no funny business, Arc." Coco warned.

"Right." Jaune said, getting slightly annoyed at the question but understanding the reason behind it. Getting up, he stretched before heading to the bathroom to freshen up. Once he was done, Velvet and Coco took their turns. After everyone was done, Coco and Velvet got into their beds while Jaune turned off the lights before heading to his chair and sitting down. Although, he did make a mental note to call his friends first thing in the morning. But as sleep started to take him, he could have sworn that Velvet took out a doll that weirdly resembled him. Thinking that his weary mind was playing tricks on him, Jaune decided to ignore it and close his eyes before falling asleep.

Notes:

Coco's anger came from misunderstanding and shock rather than pure anger.

Chapter 6

WAIT, WHAT! HOW MANY I'M MARRYING!?

Chapter 6: A Friendly... outing with a friendly Faunus? Is that the right word?

"Morning, Velvet." Coco said as she woke up with a yawn.

"Morning, Coco." Velvet said, also fighting through a yawn.

"How did you sleep?" Coco asked before smirking when she noticed the Jaune plush. *'Oh, so my bun-bun has it that bad for him. Well, I still need to see if he is worthy of her. Well, since it is Sunday, maybe we can have an... outing today to see.'*

"Fine. It would have been better if we slept in our dorm."

"True."

"Hey. Where's Jaune?"

"Arc?" Coco asked, looking around and not seeing the blond leader of Team Jnpr. "Maybe he is in the bathroom."

"Maybe."

"So." Coco said.

"So?" Velvet asked, confused.

"How bad do you have it for him?"

"For who?"

"For Arc, who else."

"I-I don't h-have a crush on him." Velvet stuttered with a blush.

"Really?" Coco asked, raising an eyebrow. "And what would you call your reaction yesterday to learning that you will be marrying him?"

"Alright. I have a small crush on him. But it might pass since it's small."

"Small?"

"I wouldn't call-" Coco began, but the sound of the door opening cut her off. Turning to it, they saw Jaune entering the room.

"Oh, morning, everyone." Jaune said as he closed the door.

"Morning, Jaune." Velvet said, thankful for his interruption and the opportunity her gave her to hide her plush.

"Morning, Arc." Coco said with a smirk as she glanced at Velvet.

"How did you two sleep?" Jaune asked.

"Fine." Coco and Velvet answered.

"Where were you, Jaune?" Velvet asked.

"I was calling my friends since we got split up last night."

"What did they say?" Coco asked.

"They were worried, but they calmed down once I told them everything. Now they are heading back to Beacon."

"That's good."

"We should probably return as well." Velvet said.

"Right." Jaune and Coco agreed.

Getting up, Coco and Velvet went to the bathroom to freshen up while Jaune fixed the beds and cleaned the room. After a few minutes, they exited the bathroom, with Jaune entering one last time. After he came out, they did a quick double-check to make sure they had everything and the room was in order before exiting and heading to the front desk.

"Thanks, Douglas, for letting us stay the night." Velvet said as they reached the desk. "And sorry for it being so sudden."

"It's fine, Velvet. And it's no problem." Douglas said before turning to Jaune. "And thanks, kid, for patching up the wall. You easily saved me fifty lien."

"No problem. It was the least I could do to repay you for letting us stay the night." Jaune said. Nodding, Douglas bid them a good day before leaving for his office.

"What was that about, Arc?" Coco asked, curious.

"Oh, ah. I fixed the cracks in the wall that you made when you nearly punched my head off last night." Jaune explained.

"Oh, right. Sorry." Coco said, still feeling a little guilty about yesterday.

"You know how to plaster, Jaune?" Velvet asked.

"Yes. Ren taught me how to plaster when we had to fix our dorm after Nora got her hands on an energy drink." Jaune answered.

"How is that connected?" Coco asked, confused.

"Let's just say that there is a reason why we never let Nora have anything with caffeine or high amounts of sugar."

"Oh, I see why now."

"But that is a useful skill to have." Velvet said.

"That depends on how you see it." Jaune shrugged. "Anyway. Let's head back to the bullheads."

"Actually." Coco said, stepping in front of them.

"Yes, Coco?" Velvet nervously asked, recognizing her leader's mischievous grin.

"Instead of returning to Beacon, how about we spend the day together?"

"Uh... what do you mean?" Jaune asked, surprised and confused.

"It is a nice day. And probably one of the remaining nice days before it starts to get cold. We shouldn't waste it by being indoors the whole day."

"True. It is a nice day, and I did hear it is supposed to get cold next weekend." Jaune greed.

"But?" Velvet asked, both fearful and hopeful for what her leader was about to say next.

"But we can also use this as an opportunity to get to know our future husband." Coco answered with a wink that Jaune missed but caused Velvet to blush as she caught the hidden meaning.

"T-the, u-uh-"

"That's a good idea, Coco. Even if we don't have feelings for each other, it would be good to get to know each other." Jaune said before taking a step back when Coco glared at him for how he worded the last part. "A-and it would make it less awkward for when we do get married."

'But hopefully, Jaune, you will develop feelings for me in the future.' Velvet thought. While it might be naive for her to think like that, Velvet knew the feelings she held for Jaune were genuine and not some kind of school-girl crush. However, after a moment, she

realized something. *'Wait. He said that Nora and Pyrrha knew about it and that something had come out about it. Damn. I should have paid attention instead of daydreaming about Jaune and me being married. Wait, I could ask Nora and Pyrrha for advice when we get back to Beacon.'*

"What do you think, Velvet?" Jaune asked, snapping her from her thoughts.

"I-I think that would be a good idea." Velvet said, turning to hide her blush. She then coughed before turning back to them. "What should we do then?"

"I'm... not sure." Jaune answered after thinking it over. "Any ideas, Coco?"

"Hmm. Maybe I can-" Coco began, but another voice cut her off. One that had an immense amount of rage and fury in it.

"HEAD BACK TO BEACON AND INTO DETENTION WHERE YOU BELONG, MS. ADEL!" The voice shouted. Turning around, the three teens nearly froze in fear when they saw a near-seething Glynda Goodwitch marching toward them. And the anger radiating from her could make even the most dangerous of Grim to run away as if the reaper was chasing them.

"M-miss Goodwitch. Nice to see you. Fabu-" Coco began, but Glynda cut her off.

"OH, NO! THAT'S NOT GOING TO WORK, MS. ADEL! YOU ARE COMING BACK WITH ME TO BEACON! AND YOU ARE GOING TO HELP ME CLEAN UP THE MESS YOU MADE! RIGHT! THIS! INSTANT!"

"B-but-"

"NOW!" Glynda shouted, causing Jaune and Velvet to take a step back. And in a bold move, but not at all unexpected, Glynda grabbed

Coco's arm and dragged her in the direction of the bullheads.

"I'LL BE BACK! DON'T YOU DARE TRY ANYTHING, ARC!" Coco shouted before Glynda turned a corner, and they disappeared from sight.

"Well." Jaune said, unsure of what to make out about what had just happened.

"That... was something." Velvet said, equally confused and shocked. "But... yeah. I don't know what to say."

"Same" Jaune said. "So, uh. What now?"

"I think we might want to stay away from Beacon. At least, for now."

"Yeah. I don't want to be on the receiving end of Glynda's wrath."

"Me neither."

"So, uh. What should we do then?"

"How about we take Coco's advice and just hang out?"

"Yeah. I think that would be good."

"It would. Do you have anything in mind we can do?"

"I honestly have no idea what we can do." Jaune sheepishly answered. "You?"

"I have no idea either." Velvet answered. "Uh. What did you do with your friends before coming to Beacon?"

"I... uh... I didn't have any friends before coming to Beacon. It was just me and my sisters." Jaune answered.

"You didn't have any friends?" Velvet asked, surprised.

"Well, I did have two friends. But that only lasted about a month or two as they moved to Mistral. And we lost contact ever since." Jaune said, thinking back. "What about you? Did you have any friends before coming to Beacon?"

"I guess that's something we have in common. I only had one friend before coming to Beacon, and he moved shortly after we became friends." Velvet chuckled.

"True. But we did make great friends once we arrived at Beacon."

"Yeah. Coco is a great friend." Velvet said, smiling. Even though Coco sometimes got on her nerves with all her teasing, Velvet was glad to have her as a friend. "And your team?"

"We're great friends. I'm glad to have met them." Jaune said, smiling. He was honestly surprised but thankful that Ozpin placed him with the others. Ren was like the brother he never had but always wanted. And he and Nora and Pyrrha became close pretty fast. Although, thanks in part due to the contracts, they were now about to become a lot closer, with their relationship becoming a lot deeper and stronger.

"Looks like that's another thing we have in common."

"Yeah. But we- Wait. That gives me an idea of what we could do." Jaune said.

"And what's that?"

"Maybe we can do things that we like to do. Like some of our hobbies."

"Uh?" Velvet asked, not entirely following.

"We can do something you like to do, as in one of your hobbies. And then we can do one of mine. That way, we spend some time together and learn a bit about each other."

"Sure. That sounds like a decent idea." Velvet agreed. While she would have preferred a more romantic option, like going on a picnic, she knew they had to take baby steps first. "But who should go first? With their hobby, I mean."

"How about-" Jaune began but went silent when his stomach growled, letting him know he hadn't had breakfast yet.

"-We get something to eat first?" Velvet asked, chuckling. Blushing, Jaune nodded as he hid his face in embarrassment. Chuckling some more, Velvet grabbed his hand and began leading him away. "Come on. I know a decent place to get some breakfast."

Five Minutes Later

"Alright. How should we do this?" Velvet asked as they ate their breakfast at a restaurant that served breakfast. While Jaune had a breakfast salad with an egg, Velvet had a smoked salmon breakfast bagel with cream cheese.

"Well. First off." Jaune said, cleaning his hands before taking a sip of his coffee. While not one for coffee, he occasionally had one when he needed to wake up or needed some energy. "We can't do a lot today since it's Sunday, which means that most places are closed or will close early. And that includes the Bullheads. And I don't think Glynda will allow anyone out late because of what happened."

"True. And as you said, the bullheads will close early today. Plus, I want to shower and sleep in my bed today." Velvet agreed. Although, internally, she wouldn't mind sleeping in the same room with Jaune again. But this time, preferably in the same bed, snuggled up to him. "I think we should make a short list or something and then see what we can do and how many."

"Good idea. Thankfully, I grabbed a few sticky notes from the motel along with one of those free pens." Jaune said as he pulled them out and clicked the pen. "So, uh. What are your hobbies?"

"Well, as you probably know already, I like photography." Velvet said with a chuckle.

"I figured when I saw you taking several photos of Beacon during the break." Jaune said, smiling as he wrote it down. "Speaking of which. Have you ever thought of taking a profession in photography?"

"As a full-time job, no. But I have thought about doing it as a freelancer from time to time." Velvet said, thinking it over for a moment. "Now, your turn. What's one of your hobbies?"

"I have a few. And one is games." Jaune said.

"What kind of games?" Velvet asked, curious. "Like video games?"

"I don't mind playing the video games like your thinking. I prefer board games or party games with friends. And I sometimes enjoy card games."

"Really? Honestly, I thought you liked playing those games where you played as a superhero or something since I've seen you reading those comic books."

"I prefer reading about that in comic books and graphic novels than playing games about them."

"What's your favorite series?"

"X-Ray and Vav."

"What's it about?"

"It surrounds two wannabe superheroes, X-Ray and Vav, and their adventures. It's a lot better than it sounds."

"I bet, considering I saw you eye a comic store as we passed it." Velvet chuckled as Jaune blushed. "Anyway. So, what should we put down for you? Comics or games?"

"I say board games." Jaune answered, writing it down. "Now you. What else do you like to do?"

"Hmm. Well, there are a few things, but I don't think we can do them today."

"Like what?" Jaune asked, curious.

"One example is I like to paint from time to time."

"Really?"

"Yup."

"What do you like to paint? Portraits? Landscapes? Or do you like painting things like miniature figures?"

"Landscape paintings." Velvet said. "But I always wanted to try on those cute little miniature figures."

"Those are fun. Expensive, but fun."

"You've painted miniature figures before?"

"A few times before I came to Beacon."

"Are they actually expensive?"

"It depends on where you get them and from what series. But yeah, most of the time, they are pretty expensive. You might find some at a good price, but that's rare."

"Do you have any on hand or in your dorm?" Velvet asked. While she didn't feel like painting today, painting those figures would make for a good time for whenever they can hang out again. Or when they started dating.

"No. I have some paints and brushes and... maybe some primers. But I don't have any figures."

"Do you know where we could get some?"

"Most are online. I think there might be a store or two around here. But I'm not sure."

"Oh, well." Velvet said while making a mental note to find those stores or a site. "Maybe another day."

"Of course." Jaune said, smiling. "But since that is out, what else?"

"How about instead we try something we've never done before?"

"No offense, Velvet. But how about we leave that until we know each a bit more?"

"Right." Velvet dejectedly said.

She wanted to get this relationship going and eventually confess just how much she loved Jaune and get into a real relationship with him, not one because of the marriage contracts. And even if it doesn't get to the point, Velvet wanted them to be as comfortable as possible around each other as soon as possible. The reason was that they didn't have a lot of time. What neither Coco nor Jaune knew was that Velvet was aware of when their wedding day would be. It fell on the eighth of February. And while that was roughly four months away, that did not give her much time. Jaune might know some of his future wives; he still had to get acquainted with the rest of them, which will take some time. Not to mention, Velvet knew Jaune would like to spend as much time with everyone as much as he could. Finally, when she took into account classes, homework, and possible missions, Velvet had, at best, two weeks of Jaune to herself. And that's not even including what-if situations or the craziness that life brings.

'Baby steps, Velvet. You don't want to overwhelm him. And hopefully, soon, Jaune will begin to fall for you. And don't forget; you can still ask Nora and Pyrrha for advice later.' Velvet mentally told herself. Internally sighing, she began to think of something else they could

do. But after a few moments, nothing they could do today came to mind. "How about we go and listen to some music?"

"Music?" Jaune asked, confused and curious.

"I'm kind of drawing a blank on what else we could do today. Most of my other hobbies, we need to know ahead of time to be able to do them, or we can't do them today for another reason. And the rest are like you said. They might be better for when we know each other a bit more." Velvet explained. "And with the music option, we can know what we like and don't like. Plus, we can listen to it while we play some of the board games."

"True." Jaune agreed as he was also drawing a blank on what they could do. Some would need a heads-up so he can prepare what they need, and others would need a reservation. Jaune might be able to think of another hobby if he had some more time, but he doubted they might have enough time to actually do it. But they could talk about them while playing a board game and listening to some music. And it would let them get to know each other more. "Sure. Alright. We can do that."

"And I think that would be it for now, considering we don't have a full day since it's Sunday."

"Right." Jaune said as he pocketed the sticky notes and pen before paying for their food. "So, what do you want to do first?"

"I'd say the photography since that would take the most time." Velvet answered as they exited the restaurant. "And we will need to get some cameras to use. And I know a spot where we can rent some."

"Alright."

Letting Velvet take the lead, Jaune followed her across town to a shop that he had never seen or heard of before. Looking around the front, the store didn't seem too different from the few other camera shops Jaune had seen. And once they entered, it seemed like a

switch flipped inside Velvet. She became a different person entirely. However, Jaune smiled as he instantly recognized the reason. After all, he had seen it so many times in his teammates and sisters.

Velvet was in her element.

Heading to the nearest camera, Velvet started examining each one with a critical eye. While some of the cameras seemed identical for Jaune, to Velvet, they were as different as paintings and art deco. After a couple of minutes, she seemed to have found a camera that, thankfully, didn't cost too much. Velvet then gave the two cameras to Jaune before heading over to the store's lens section. And just like with the cameras, Jaune could barely tell the differences between them. The only thing that stood out was how thin or long they were. Yet, just like with the cameras, Velvet could tell what each lens was for.

'Maybe I could take a course online to get more familiar with photography. Who knows, I might like it. Plus, it would give us something to bond or talk over whenever we are hanging out. Also, maybe I could ask Velvet to teach me about it.' Jaune thought as Velvet walked up to an employee.

"Excuse me." Velvet said.

"Yes?" The employee asked, turning to Velvet.

"Do you know which cameras have the best shutter speed and which lenses have the best bokeh?

"Oh, yes. This Dustjin EF camera has the best shutter speed." The employee began.

'But first, I should probably get one of those dictionaries that explain everything, as I am already lost.' Jaune thought, already confused about the terms Velvet and the employee used as they discussed the cameras and lenses.

Fifteen Minutes Later

"And here's your change." The cashier said as he handed Velvet her change.

"Thanks." Velvet said before exiting the store, followed by Jaune. "Sorry, that took a bit."

"It's fine." Jaune said, smiling. "Did you get what we need?"

"Yup. I got everything we need."

"So, uh. Where should we start? I mean, where should we start taking photos?"

"How about the pier?"

"Okay."

Ten Minutes Later

Pier

"Alright. We're here." Velvet said, admiring the beautiful views and thinking about all the great shots they could take. But soon, an interesting thought came to mind. *'Hmm. Maybe, for the wedding, we can have it at the pier. Perhaps not this one, but a nicer one. And at sunset. Or, if we can afford it, at the waterfall.'*

"So, what camera do I have?" Jaune asked, curious.

"Right." Velvet said, snapping back to focus. She then took out both cameras they had brought and handed one to Jaune. "Since we're here to hang out and learn about my hobby, and since your a novice, no offense."

"None taken." Jaune chuckled.

"I got us some beginner cameras and some 'standard' lenses for this."

"What do you mean by standard lenses?" Jaune asked, curious.

"There are a whole ton of lenses out there for cameras that are used for many specific situations, with some working better than others. But that's a simplified answer. And the ones I got are the ones that some photographers use the most. Well, those in specific fields, that is."

"Can you give me an example of some uses for those lenses?"

"Okay. Umm. Do you ever watch some Dusttubers where they are filming themselves?"

"Yes."

"Well. Most of the time, they use a 20mm lens which gives them a wide-ish view of them. But if they want to do a close-up, they would use a 45mm. It allows for very close shots while keeping everything crisp and clean, including even the tiniest of details."

"That's neat." Jaune said before a question arose. "But how does the lenses do that?"

"That would take me a bit to explain. And I don't think we have enough time to go over that. But to keep it simple, different lenses can change the field of view. But that's another oversimplified answer."

"I guess that explains why some photos I took years ago didn't come out so well." Jaune said, thinking back to the time when he took some photos of his older sister's graduation with a camera he found. And while they were nice, he couldn't help but feel like something was off. But now he probably knew why. But that reminded Jaune of something else. "Oh. I just thought of this. What about our scroll lenses?"

"Oh, scroll's cameras are an abomination and aren't that good. No, I take that back. They are terrible." Velvet answered.

"Really?"

"Yup. Let me show you." Velvet said before snapping a photo of Jaune with the 45mm lens and then taking one with her scroll's camera. She then moved next to Jaune to show him the results. "See. With the 45mm, it looks very natural."

"Yeah. It does." Jaune said, surprised at how clear and natural the image looked.

"That's because a 45mm lens is much closer to what our eyes perceive. Now, this is what we get on the scroll's camera." Velvet said as she showed Jaune. "See. The difference is night and day. Nothing here seems right."

"Yeah. This doesn't seem that good. It seems almost uncanny."

"That's why, whenever I or the rest of my team wants to take a photo, I always use my camera." Velvet said. "Anyway. Let's begin. Here is a 12mm for taking pictures of slightly larger objects, a 35mm for taking pictures of landscapes, and a 50mm lens for taking pictures of people. You might have to bounce around them and adjust your distance to whatever you're taking a photo of. But take your time; you'll get it. And if you have any questions, just ask."

"Thanks, Velvet." Jaune said.

Nodding, Velvet went to take some photos of the pier and nearby boardwalk. Looking down at the camera, Jaune shrugged and decided to take a few pictures of the landscape. However, if he remembered correctly, he had to switch lenses to the 35mm lens. Thankfully, the lenses each had their mm on them. And, also luckily, Jaune saw that replacing the lenses was rather simplistic.

Raising the camera to his eye, Jaune moved around until he felt like he had a decent view of the ocean before snapping the photo. And, to his surprise, it came out much clearer than expected. It was far better than anything Jaune had taken before with his scroll's camera. It almost appeared as if someone had created it online. Happy with the results, Jaune started taking more photos of the pier. However, not all of them came out as great as the first one. But that didn't deter Jaune as he kept taking more photos.

But, while Jaune was experimenting with taking some photos, he was unaware that Velvet was occasionally taking pictures of him. The reason was that she wanted to preserve this moment so they could look back on it down the road. However, Jaune wasn't the only one Velvet was taking photos of. She was taking pictures of everything around her. There was something that Jaund didn't know but probably will soon. And that was that each of his wives would be able to pick out what they wanted for their weddings. And how Velvet knew this when her mother called her in the middle of the night to tell her a few more details about the marriage contract.

'But what should we do about the honeymoon?' Velvet wondered as she turned back to Jaune. And she smiled when she saw that Jaune was getting into taking photos. He seemed to be enjoying it. *'Maybe I can give him some lesson the next time we hang out.'*

One Hour Later

"Need some help, Jaune?" Velvet asked as she walked over to Jaune after noticing him looking between the three lenses she gave him.

"Uh, maybe." Jaune answered, confused.

"What do you need help with?"

"The 45mm is for up close and personal shots, right?"

"Yes."

"Which lens do I use if I want an accurate shot with something that's far away but I can still make out the details?"

"Oh. For that, you need a Telephoto lens. Telephoto lenses increase the focal length and allow you to take photos of far-away objects with an accurate perspective and with a level of precise detail."

"And none of these are a telephoto lens, right?"

"Nope."

"Maybe next time." Jaune said, surprising her.

"Wait. You want to do this again?"

"Yeah, it was fun. Although, I had no idea what most of the options/settings on the camera were."

"Yeah. It can be a bit overwhelming." Velvet chuckled before realizing this was her chance. "If you want, whenever you're free, I can give you some lessons about photography."

"Sure." Jaune said, smiling. "Actually. I was planning on asking you if you could teach me."

"I would love to."

"Thanks, Velvet."

"Anytime." Velvet said as she checked her schedule on her scroll. But as she did, she realized that it was starting to get late. And she had only paid to rent the cameras for an hour and a half. "We should probably get going. It's starting to get late, and we need to return the cameras."

"Alright."

Putting the lenses and cameras back into the bag, they headed back to the camera shop.

Fifteen Minutes Later

"Okay. You should receive the photos by tomorrow and the physical copies by Tuesday." The employee said.

"Alright. Thanks." Velvet said as she grabbed her recipe.

"Now, what do you want to do?" Jaune asked as they exited the store. But Jaune did make a mental note to remember the name of the place so he could come here again and possibly purchase a camera. Because after taking a few photos with the camera and those lenses, there was no way he would go back to using his scroll's camera.

"We did say we're going to see what music we like so we can listen to it while we play some board games."

"Right."

"Speaking of which, do you know of any music stores nearby?"

"I know of one. It's a few blocks down from the Shopkeep's bookstore."

"Really? I don't think I ever saw one there." Velvet said, thinking back to the times she was there. "Did it open recently?"

"No. It's been there for a while. It's just that most only head there for the Shopkeep's store." Jaune explained. "Which doesn't make that much sense when I say out loud."

"Yeah. You would expect it to be the opposite, right?"

"Yup. But then again, life is full of surprises."

Twenty Minutes Later

"Okay. Here we are." Jaune said as they arrived.

"Ms. Daisy's Wonderous Music Emporium?" Velvet asked, confused.

"Yeah. The owner is a big fan of the old book about the toy store with the toys that threw a tantrum when the owner decided to retire or leave."

"Oh. That emporium toy store story, right?"

"Yup. That's the one."

"Well, that explains the name."

"Anyway. Let's head in." Jaune said as they moved to the door. But before they could open it, they quickly moved to the side when it suddenly flew open.

"SORRY!" A faunus girl with an orange tail shouted as she ran with a surprising amount of speed. But what caught Jaune and Velvet's attention was the semi-transparent, colorful trail the girl created as she ran.

"That... was... something." Jaune said, surprised.

"Yeah." Velvet agreed.

"Do you think she was a huntress?"

"I want to say yes, but I have seen a few civilians using their semblance."

"Oh, right. I forgot that some other jobs require people to have their aura unlocked." Jaune said, remembering that his sister, Midori, had to get her aura unlocked. "But why do you think she was running? Could she have been in trouble?"

"I don't think she was in trouble. I think she was running late for something."

"Well, hopefully, it's just that, and nothing is troubling her." Jaune said as they entered the store.

"Oh, wow. That's a lot of music." Velvet said, surprised at how many CDs, vinyls, cassette tapes, and music players there were.

"Yup. My team and I said the same thing when we first came here." Jaune said, chuckling.

"You definitely have to bring me here the next time we get a chance. I don't think we will be able to look through everything in a single day."

"Sure."

"Let's get started then." Velvet said as they moved to the CD section and began looking through the selection. "What's your favorite genre, Jaune?"

"I don't really have a preference, to be honest. But if I had to choose, I would say country music, with classical rock being a close second. Although, I also occasionally listen to folk songs. But what about you?"

"I like Heavy Metal."

"Heavy Metal?" Jaune asked, raising an eyebrow. "I wasn't expecting that."

"No one does. Not even my mom was expecting me to listen to Heavy Metal." Velvet said, rolling her eyes. It never ceased to amaze and slightly annoy her that people thought she wouldn't like or listen to heavy metal. Grabbing a CD case that caught her eye, she picked it up and looked over the songs on the back. "What's your favorite band, Jaune?"

"For Country, I don't have a favorite 'band.' But I do have a favorite singer, and that is Dean Brody."

"What about classic rock and folk?"

"For classic rock, I would say the Eagles. And for Folk, I'm not sure since I don't know too many singers or bands. But from the ones I do now, I would say The High Kings." Jaune said, thinking it over. "And what's your favorite band?"

"Hmm. I would say my favorite band is Slayer. But a close second is Disturbed." Velvet answered as she found a The Dark Ride CD from the band Helloween. While she hadn't heard of the band before, she wasn't opposed to listening to something new. "Oh. Here's something."

"You found something?" Jaune asked as he found a Beautiful Freakshow album by Dean Brody.

"No. I just thought of something."

"What is it?"

"Do you have like a guilty pleasure song?"

"A guilty pleasure song?"

"Yeah. A song you like to listen to but don't want others to know that you listen to."

"Oh, ah." Jaune began, hesitant to tell Velvet as it was somewhat private. But then he realized it would be a good start to get to know each other as more than friends. And it would help them grow closer with each other. "Alright. My guilty pleasure song is Last Resort by Papa Roach."

"I'll be honest; I wasn't expecting you to listen to Papa Roach. Then again, I really shouldn't say that, considering everyone doesn't expect me to listen to heavy metal."

"What about you, Velvet? What's your guilty pleasure song?"

"Oh. Ah. Come here. Let me whisper it to you. I don't like saying it out loud." Velvet said, embarrassed.

"Alright." Jaune said, leaning in so Velvet could whisper it in his ear. Only to furiously blush when she told him what her guilty pleasure song was. "Oh."

"Yeah." Velvet said, blushing.

"So, uh. Did you find something you want to buy?"

"Yeah. I found these two albums." Velvet said, showing him The Dark Ride and Paranoid CDs. "And you?"

"Beautiful Freakshow by Dean Brody and Something to Be Proud Of by Montgomery Gentry." Jaune said, showing her the albums.

"And I just realized because we have CDs, we need something to play them." Velvet said.

"Don't worry. They sell some CD players that have speakers built into them." Jaune said as he gave his CDs to Velvet. "Why don't you head to the register while I grab the radio?"

"Alright." Velvet said. Jaune then went over to the CD players while Velvet went to the cashiers.

"Hello." The employee said.

"Hello." Velvet said as she handed the employee the CDs.

"Will that be all?"

"No. My friend will be here any second. He just had to grab one of the CD players."

"Okay. Is there anything else you would like?"

"No. We got everything." Velvet answered. While she did want to start looking for wedding music, she wanted to go over the options with her mom and Jaune. *'But maybe soon we can do that.'*

"Sorry, that took a bit." Jaune said as he arrived with the CD player.

"Will that be all?" The employee asked.

"Yes."

"Alright. That will be seventy lien."

"Here." Jaune said as he paid for it.

"Have a nice day," The employee said as he handed them a bag.

"Thanks." Velvet and Jaune said as they exited the door.

"Okay. We have the music. Now the board games." Velvet said. "Also. Where should we play them?"

"We can play them in the park." Jaune answered.

"Alright."

Half an Hour Later

Gone like a freight train

Gone like yesterday

Gone like a soldier in the Civil War

Bang Bang!

Gone like a '59 Cadillac

Like all the good things, that ain't never comin' back

"J10." Velvet said, cupping her chin.

"Miss." Jaune answered while grabbing some nachos. After leaving the music store, Jaune and Velvet headed to a nearby game shop and bought some relatively cheap board games. After that, they went to the park and brought some nachos from a nearby cart to snack on since they were getting peckish.

"Damn." Velvet said as she put a white marker on J10. "So, what's your favorite food?"

"Cheeseburgers. C8."

"Hit. And really? I thought your favorite food was chicken nuggets in the shape of dinosaurs."

"B8. And yeah. I love a good cheeseburger. And while I do like chicken nuggets, I only eat them when I'm feeling homesick."

"You sunk my Destroyer." Velvet grumbled. "Alright. Your turn."

"A10. And what's your favorite dessert?"

"Miss. And black forest cake. G1"

"Hit. Black Forest Cake? I was not expecting that."

"G2. And what did you expect?"

"Hit. Something a little less sweet, to be honest. Like Lemon-Berry Scones."

"G3. Oh. Yeah, I can see why I thought you would think that. But I love chocolate cakes. Although, I'm surprised you didn't say Red Velvet Cake or something with carrots."

"You sunk my Cruiser. And that's a stereotype and misconception. Bunnies and rabbits don't like or rarely eat carrots. And thinking that because you have rabbit features is a gross generalization."

"A1." Velvet said, smiling, happy that Jaune didn't fall for those lies and misconceptions so many believed. "What's your favorite movie?"

"It's the Spiderman movie. But it is the one where he was a college student and had webs that came out of his hands instead of special devices. Hit."

"B1. What about those other Spiderman movies?"

"Hit. And I like them, but I prefer the original trilogy."

"C1. I didn't see the ones with the newest actor, but I also prefer the original trilogy, even though I'm not too into superhero movies. Your turn."

"Hit again. And what's your favorite season movie? Like favorite Halloween movie or Christmas movie."

"I don't like horror movies, even though Coco makes us watch them almost all the time. But for Christmas movies, I would say A Christmas Carol. And what about you? What's your favorite seasonal movie? Also, D1."

"You sunk my Battleship." Jaune said, slightly annoyed as he saw down to one ship while Velvet still had four ships. "I would say those Sleepy Hollow movies where there is more plot than mindless killing."

"That's with the headless horseman, right? I6."

"Miss. And yes. B8."

"Hit. Okay. Your turn."

"B9. What's your favorite book?"

"You sunk my Cruiser. And I would say Journey to the Center of the Earth." Velvet answered as she placed the red marker on her

Cruiser. "Okay. You said you prefer party games. What's your favorite non-party video game?"

"Non-party games? I'm not sure. Maybe some simulation games. J1."

"Miss. And just asking, but aren't you at the top of the class in tactics and such? Also F6."

"Hit. And yes. When it comes to tactics, planning, and leadership classes, I'm at the top of the class. Well, at least for first-year students. Why?"

"G6. I thought you would enjoy playing tactical games where you control units."

"Miss. And I never really played them since some of them are really expensive while others are heavily pay-to-win. I7."

"Miss. Your turn. F7."

"And you win. You sunk my Cruiser." Jaune said. "Alright. Hmm."

"Wait. Jaune. Can I ask the final question?"

"Sure."

"Do you like to go camping?"

"I love camping. Although, I haven't been able to go camping since I was ten." Jaune answered, smiling as the memories returned.

"Maybe we can do that one day." Velvet said, already planning a camping trip as one of their future actual, romantic dates.

"Sure. Maybe-"

BOOM

"Maybe another day." Jaune said as they looked up at the sky and saw that it had gotten dark rather quickly.

"Yeah. But we should head back to Beacon now." Velvet agreed as they packed up. "But I had fun hanging out with you today, Jaune."

"Same."

"Maybe we can do it another day."

"Of course." Jaune said as they headed to the bullheads.

Meanwhile

Beacon Academy

"And done." Coco tiredly said as she finally finished cleaning the last room that she had destroyed in her anger.

"Very good, Ms. Adel. You've completed the first part of your detention." Glynda said as she collected the papers she was grading. "Now. You'll report back here tomorrow at eight in the morning for the second part of your detention."

"Ah. Ms. Goodwitch. With all due respect, can we postpone the detention until the day after tomorrow?" Coco nervously asked.

"Why?" Glynda asked, raising an eyebrow.

It had undoubtedly been an... off two days for her. First, yesterday was almost too peaceful, with very little paperwork to do. This set Glynda on edge, as that was highly unusual. But just as she was to take advantage of it, she gets reports that an angry Adel was tearing through the halls of Beacon in anger. This raised numerous alarms as the faculty knew that Ms. Adel was one of Beacon's calmer, more in-control students. Initially, Glynda would have questioned Ms. Adel as soon as she got to her, but her nerves snapped when she learned that Coco broke down a wall and fired her weapon in the halls. And now she was asking to postpone the detention.

'Something isn't right.' Glynda thought as Coco put away the broom and shovel.

"Well. It's tough to explain without making it sound unbelievable. So, I'm just going to show you." Coco said as she pulled out the marriage contract she swiped from Jauen when he wasn't looking and placed it on the desk. "I'm in an arranged marriage situation with Arc that our parents made years ago."

Silence.

"Uh. Ms. Good-"

"In all my years, I have never heard of something so bizarre and out of left field. And I have worked with Ozpin for a solid amount of time." Glynda said, shocked.

'Not the reaction I was expecting. But I can't blame her.' Coco thought. "As I said, I can't exactly explain it without making it sound unbelievable."

"I can see that. And I'm even more shocked that your parents made the contract with Mr. Arc's parents. But it's far from the worst choice. Honestly, it's one of the better choices. At least, from Beacon Academy." Glynda said as she looked over the contract. Due to her experience with contracts, she could tell when something was forged and when something was valid. And that's why she always wanted to examine the new applicants' transcripts to determine their validity rather than let Ozpin do it. "But what does this have to do with postponing your detention? You could always get to know your future husband after your detention."

"Well, not me specifically. You see, Arc is not just marrying me. He's also marrying seventeen other girls. And before you ask, all the parents are aware of this."

"SEVENTEEN!?" Glynda asked, shocked.

"Yup. Eighteen in total."

"I feel like Arc's parents wanted to turn his life into a soap opera."

"I never thought of it like that, but yeah. It seems like it." Coco said before taking out Velevt's contract that she also swiped and showed it to Glynda. "But anyway. Velvet is one of them. I see her like a sister I always wanted to tease. And I want to see Arc's character to see if he meets my standards. If he does, I'll help them get together since Velvet has a massive crush on him. If not, or if he does something I really don't like, I'll find a way to terminate the contract so Velvet doesn't get hurt."

"That's really admirable, Ms. Adel." Glynda said, setting down the contracts. "But that's not enough of a reason since you can always do it after your detention."

"I know. But I want to do it as soon as possible since I'm probably not going to get a good chance for a while."

"Why?"

"Well. From what my mother told me, our weddings begin in February, which is four months away. And Arc will be busy meeting his other future wives and completing his assignments and homework. That means he will barely have any free time. And I'm pretty sure he would be too exhausted during those times."

"You're right. That does not give you a lot of time. Maybe, at best, a week you have." Glynda said before sighing. "Very well, Ms. Adel. You have been a model student since arriving here and have given me almost no trouble. So, I will postpone your detention until this weekend. And tomorrow, you will have your time with Arc. While *I can* vouch for Arc's character, I know you want to see it personally. So, I'm allowing you to do it on the condition that you don't harm Arc and apologize to him for all the trouble you caused him and his team."

"Thank you, Ms. Goodwitch. But I also already apologized to Arc's team and Arc himself. And they forgave me and told me it was alright since they kind of expected it."

"Good. Now. If you want, I can take the contract to Professor Peach so she can look it over to see if there is some way to nullify it."

"Wait. Professor Peach is a lawyer?" Coco asked, confused. "I thought she was a wilderness survivalist and botanist?"

"She is a wilderness survivalist and botanist. However, Peach's parents were lawyers. And they taught her everything they knew. Because of that, Peach now knows the ins and outs of contracts and many legal jargon." Glynda explained.

"Does she teach any of that to the upperclassman?"

"I wish since it would help them, but no. She doesn't."

"Yeah. It would help all of us. Anyway. Thanks again, Ms. Goodwitch."

"You're welcome, Ms. Adel. Now go and prepare for tomorrow." Glynda said, smiling. Nodding, Coco ran out of the room to go get ready. But as soon as the door closed, Glynda sighed before opening a drawer, pulling out her secret stash of brandy, and pouring some into her coffee. "I seriously need a vacation. I don't think I can handle any more twists. Especially ones as crazy and twisted as Arc marrying eighteen girls. Hopefully, they can get along and are respectable ones like Miss Nikos and Ms. Adel."

Notes:

Some of the answers to the questions that Velvet/Jaune gave were things I found on Reddit. But some I didn't use as they were almost cliché and overused at this point. Ex. Velvet's favorite dessert being carrot cake. So, I went for something different.

The thing about Jaune liking board games and party games from some game master Arc (Or something like that) stories I read a while back. But instead of video games, I decided to change to board games. As for party games, I figured he would have preferred them over others since it allowed him to play with his sisters.

Chapter 7

WAIT, WHAT! HOW MANY I'M MARRYING!?

Chapter 7: An Outing with the Fashionista... I'm still not sure that's the right word.

Beacon Academy

"This storm came out of nowhere." Jaune said as they ran inside Beacon Academy.

"Yeah. I don't think I saw it on the weather report." Velvet agreed as they took off their ponchos. While a relatively new addition, Velvet and Jaune were thankful that bullheads now had emergency ponchos for passengers in case it rained.

"Hopefully, it stops by tomorrow."

"Hopefully."

"Anyway. We should head to our dorms. It's getting late, and we should get ready to go to sleep."

"Yeah. And I would like to take a nice, long, hot shower." Velvet said, stretching. But she blushed a second later when a certain naughty entered her mind. Thankfully, Jaune didn't notice.

"Same. And my teammates are probably worried." Jaune said, unsure if he should be excited about it or worried.

"Mine should be too."

"Speaking of which, should I be worried about Coco?" Jaune asked as they made their way to their dorms.

"I don't think so. But I'll talk to her once I get back to my dorm." Velvet answered before remembering something. "Although. You might get pulled to the side by Fox and Yatsuhashi. But that's because they are protective of me. But you don't have to worry; they are nowhere near as scary as Coco."

"That's a relief."

"Oh. And just a heads up. Fox might use his semblance on you as a sort of pseudo-lie-detector."

'If only mom or dad could do that. If they could, the twins wouldn't have been able to blame me or the others for what they did.' Jaune thought, remembering the times he and his sisters got in trouble because of the twins. "Thanks for the heads up, then."

"You're welcome." Velvet said as they arrived at Jaune's dorm.

"See you tomorrow, Velvet."

"See you tomorrow. And thanks for the... hanging out with me." Velvet said, catching herself before she said date. As much as she wanted to call it a date, she knew it wasn't one. But she hoped they could have one in the future instead of it being just friends hanging out.

"Thanks for hanging out with me, Velvet. And thanks for saving me from Coco."

"Of course. I can't have my future husband maimed by another of his future wives." Velvet said, chuckling while Jaune rolled his eyes. "Anyway. Do you think you will be free later this week so we can hang out again?"

"I'm not sure. I'll have to check my schedule. And I also have to wait for my parents to send me the dates of when I'll meet my other future wives. But once I'm sure, I'll text you."

"Wait. Do you still have those sticky notes and pen?"

"Yes. Why?"

"Let me give you my number so you can text me."

"Oh, right. Here you go." Jaune said, handing Velvet the sticky notes and pen.

"And here you go." Velvet said, handing the note back to Jaune after writing down her number.

"See you-" Jaune began but froze when Velvet gave him a quick hug. "Tomorrow."

"See you tomorrow, Jaune." Velvet said, resisting the urge to kiss Jaune on the cheek before running to her dorm. Shaking it off but smiling, Jaune opened the door and entered his dorm.

"Hey, guys. I'm back." Jaune said as he closed the door. And no sooner than he did, Pyrrha and Nora immediately pulled him into a tight hug.

"JAUNE! YOU'RE BACK!" They shouted, relieved to see their friend and future husband safe and sound.

"Are you okay, Jaune? Did you work everything out with Coco?" Ren asked from his bed.

"Yes. Everything is fine now." Jaune answered as he moved to sit on his bed.

"What did Coco say?" Pyrrha asked as she and Nora sat next to him.

"Well. Coco was furious at first. But after realizing I had no part in it and talking with her mom, she calmed down."

"What did she say about the fact that she is going to marry you?" Nora asked.

"Well, Coco's not thrilled about it. She said she would have preferred to get into a relationship on her own terms, which is understandable. But Coco also said she felt relieved that she would be marrying someone she at least somewhat knew."

"Did she want to nullify the contract?" Ren asked.

"That's a little complicated. She's not thrilled about it, but Coco also said that canceling the contract won't solve much since her mother might just do it again. There's more to it, but that's just the jist of it."

"Did she say anything else?" Pyrrha asked.

"Not much in terms of things I can tell you at the moment. But Coco did suggest we try to get to know each other better so we can become friends. And so it would be less awkward when we get married."

"That's a good idea." Ren said.

"But onto more important things. Where were you today?" Nora asked, curious and slightly worried.

"I was hanging out with Velvet today." Jaune answered.

"Like a date?" Pyrrha asked, curious.

"No. We just hung out to get to know each other better. I honestly don't have any feelings for Velvet. Not even hidden ones or ones that I didn't know I had. But as I told Velvet, that might change in the future. And even if it doesn't, at least we'll know each other better."

"True. Hopefully, it does change, though. And even if it doesn't, it won't be awkward when the marriage date finally arrives." Nora said before yawning.

"Will you be hanging out with Velvet again soon?" Ren asked.

"Yes. But I'm not sure when." Jaune answered before yawning. "But for now, let's head to sleep. It's late."

Nodding, Jaune got into the bathroom for a quick shower while the others got ready to sleep. After a few moments, he exited the bathroom and got into his bed. And no sooner than Jaune pulled the blankets over him did Nora and Pyrrha slide into his bed. They then kissed him before falling snuggling into him and falling asleep.

'I should fill out a form for a larger bed so we can sleep together from now on. But that's if they want that.' Jaune thought as Ren turned off the lights. Sighing, he closed his eyes and let sleep take him.

Meanwhile

Team CFVY's Dorm

"Hey, guys. I'm back." Velvet said as she closed the door. And she was surprised at how great the room looked. It was as if nothing had happened.

"Hey, Velvet." Fox said as he rested on his bed.

"How was your date?" Yatsuhashi asked, smirking.

"I-it wasn't a date." Velvet answered, blushing.

"Really? It wasn't a date?"

"No, unfortunately. We were just hanging out to get to know each other better." Velvet said as she sat on her bed before looking around. And after not seeing Coco, she placed her Jaune plush underneath her pillow. "Even though I wish it were a date."

"Well. Getting to know the person *IS* usually the first step in a typical relationship. Maybe you can think of it like that. You can think of today as a precursor to an eventual date with Jaune." Fox said.

"Fox is right, Velvet. After all, you can't go rushing into things, especially a date. It's best to take baby steps. And who knows? Maybe it will turn into a real relationship before you know it." Yatsuhashi added.

"You're right. I just hope we can get another chance to hang out soon since he is going to be really busy soon." Velvet sighed.

"Hopefully. But we'll see." Fox said.

"Where's Coco?"

"She's still in detention or just finished. Either way, she should be here soon. And that means we should start getting ready since it's a bit past curfew." Yatsuhashi answered.

"Yeah. It's late. And I want to take a warm shower before heading to bed."

"Oh, before I forget. Where did you take Arc after he got separated from us?"

"I took him to the place I go to whenever I need a break from Beacon life."

"How long did it take for Coco to find you?" Fox asked.

"She somehow got there before us."

"That must have been a shock." Yatsuhashi said.

"It was. I'm pretty sure Jaune nearly fainted."

"But at least everything worked out in the end, right?" Fox asked.

"More or less. There are still a few things we need to iron out. But it's much better now than it was yesterday. And might only improve from here on out."

"Speaking of yesterday." Yatsuhashi began with a smirk that was more fitting for Coco. "Did you sleep in the same bed at the place with Jaune?"

"I-I-I. No. We didn't." Velvet answered, blushing. "Coco slept on one bed while I slept on the other. Jaune slept on the chair."

"Maybe that can also change in the future."

"Y-you're spending too much time with Coco." Velvet said, rolling her eyes. "Anyway. I'm going to take a shower and then head to sleep. Night guys."

"Good night, Velvet." They said.

"Do you still want to question, Arc?" Fox asked once the door closed.

"No. We don't need to. I learned a lot about him while we were heading to the safe spot. And the rest from his teammates. He's a good guy. And besides, Coco is probably going to see if he meets her standards soon. So we don't need to do anything. Velvet is safe." Yatsuhashi answered.

"That's good." Fox said before yawning. "We should probably get to sleep as well."

"Right."

Getting up, they changed into their night clothes before getting into their beds and falling asleep a moment later. After a few minutes, Velvet exited the bathroom and got into her bed. Pulling the blanket over her body, she got comfy before grabbing her Jaune plush and falling asleep. However, as soon as she did, Coco tiptoed into the room and smiled at what she saw.

'Forget in love; Velvet is almost obsessed with Arc. Still, tomorrow I'm going to see if Arc is worthy of dating my bun-bun. And maybe learn a bit about him like Velvet did today. It would do us both good if

we knew more than just our names.' Coco thought as she got into her bed and fell asleep a moment later.

The Next Day

Cafeteria

"Hey, guys." Jaune said as he and his team sat across from Team Rwby with their breakfast.

"Morning, Jnpr." Weiss said before taking a sip of her tea.

"How did you guys sleep?" Blake asked.

"Not the greatest." They answered.

"Well, hopefully, tonight will be different." Yang said, eying Ruby to ensure she ate the vegetables that were a part of her breakfast.

"But speaking of night. What happened two nights ago? We heard a lot of yelling and crashing." Blake asked.

"Oh. Uh-" Pyrrha began, unsure of what to say. Thankfully, Nora had an answer ready.

"There was some... miscommunication between some upperclassmen. One thing led to another, and a fight broke out. Thankfully, Glynda arrived in time to stop it." Nora lied.

"Was anybody hurt?" Ruby asked.

"Well, one guy got hurt. But he recovered quickly." Ren answered. "But we were fine."

"That's good." Yang said.

"But anyway. Is there anything on anyone's schedule?" Jaune asked.

"No. Not for Ruby or me. We got the whole day to ourselves."

"Yup." Ruby added.

"What about you, Blake?" Nora asked.

"I'm leaving today for home." Blake answered.

"When will you be leaving?" Pyrrha asked.

"About an hour, an hour and a half after we finish eating."

"And you, Weiss? Aren't you leaving today?" Ren asked.

"No. I'm leaving tomorrow. Early." Weiss answered.

"What time?" Yang asked.

"Around seven in the morning since it will be a long flight."

"That's a little early. Couldn't you have gotten a later flight?" Jaune asked.

"Unfortunately, not. This was the latest flight available. And don't worry, Jaune. I'm used to these early wake-ups."

"Alright. But if you want, I can head into town and buy some chamomile tea or something else to help you fall asleep."

"Thank you, Jaune. But I'm good. I already have some chamomile tea. I just need to make some and head to bed early tonight so I can wake up refreshed in time for my flight."

"Alright."

"What about you guys?" Ruby asked.

"Pyrrha and I need to go over a few things." Nora answered.

"There are a few things our families are doing, and we agreed to help each other." Pyrrha added. What they still had to tell Jaune was

that they were already planning their wedding. Their parents had called them yesterday and explained to them that they could customize nearly everything about the wedding aside from a few things like traditions.

"And I'll probably just catch up on some shows." Ren said.

"What about you, Jaune?" Yang asked.

"Not sure." Jaune said, thinking it over before shrugging. "Eh. I'll probably-"

"-Head into town with me so we can learn more about each other." A voice interjected.

"Coco?" Jaune asked, surprised, as he turned around. He was honestly expecting not to see Coco for the next few days. So to hear her say that was something he was not expecting. "Uh. What are you doing here?"

"Why else? To take you out into town so we can get to know each other like you did with Velvet yesterday."

"Wait. You went out on a date with Velvet yesterday?" Yang asked, shocked.

"Not a date, just getting to know each other better. And now it's my turn. Come on, blondie. We have a big day ahead of us." Coco said before pulling Jaune from his seat by his shirt and dragging him away. But before they exited the cafeteria, Coco shouted over her shoulder. "Don't worry. I'll have Arc back by the end of the day in one piece. Well, mostly in one piece, depending on how it goes. Ciao."

"Get the stuff ready, Ren." Jaune said before Coco dragged him out of the cafeteria.

"Will do, Jaune." Ren chucked.

"Uh. What did we just witness?" Blake asked, thoroughly confused.

"And did he mean by that, Ren?" Weiss asked.

"I believe both answers coincide with each other. Let's just say Velvet and Jaune decided to hang out a bit more to get to know each other. And so Velvet can pay him back for stopping Team Crdl from harassing her. So they spent the day together. But, uh, we all know Coco is very protective of Velvet. So she just might want to test Jaune's character personally to see if Velvet is safe around him or something like that. And what Jaune meant was for me to get some medical supplies we recently brought ready in case he gets hurt."

"So that's why you brought all those medical supplies?" Ruby asked, curious.

"Not exactly. Our team decided to have some supplies on hand in case we got hurt or the medical wing was packed. But most of it was for Professor Peach's assignment."

"I think we should do that too. And by that, I mean get some medical supplies for our dorm." Weiss said.

"Yeah. I think we should." The rest of Team Rwby agreed.

"But imagine if Jaune was really going on a date with Coco." Yang said, smirking.

"Yang. A more likely scenario would be Ms. Goodwitch retiring or Ozpin making actual sensible decisions." Weiss said.

"As much as I don't want it to sound insulting, those are more plausible scenarios than Coco dating Jaune." Blake added. "But I would say it wouldn't be far-fetched if Jaune and Velvet decided to start dating or enter a serious relationship."

"Yeah. I can see that, honestly. Their personalities aren't that different. Well, they are, but they seem more compatible than Coco's personality." Yang said while eyeing Pyrrha to see if there was any reaction from the redhead that was head over heels in love with

Jaune. But she raised an eyebrow when Pyrrha and Nora only smiled and seemed to hope that would happen.

"Either way. I do hope Coco brings Jaune back in one piece. He promised me last week that we would read some new comics together. And it would a be a lot harder for Jaune to do so if he is in multiple pieces." Ruby said, causing the others to chuckle.

"Don't worry. Coco will bring him back in one piece." A new voice assured. Turning around, both teams were surprised to see Velvet standing there with a nervous smile.

"Uh. Hello, Velvet. Do you... require something?" Weiss asked, unsure of what to say since they had never talked to Velvet before.

"Kind of. I just need to talk with Pyrrha and Nora in private." Velvet answered, surprising Team Rwby but earning knowing looks from Nora and Pyrrha. "I-If they are free right now, that is."

"Sure." Nora said.

"Where do you want to talk?" Pyrrha asked.

"Can we do so in your dorm?" Velvet asked.

"Sure. Let's go." Nora said as she, Pyrrha, and Velvet headed to JNPR's dorm.

"I wonder what she wants to talk about." Ruby said.

"She probably wants to know a bit more about Jaune." Ren answered with a shrug.

"Maybe. But it's none of our business." Weiss said, with the others agreeing.

"And even if it were, I couldn't stay for it. I need to go now and finish preparing." Blake said, getting up.

"Alright. See you after the break, Blake." Yang said.

"See you guys." Blake said as she exited the cafeteria.

JNPR's Dorm

"So you to talk about Jaune, right, Velvet?" Nora asked as Pyrrha closed the door for privacy.

"Was it that obvious?" Velvet asked.

"Not really. We just figured, considering what Jaune told us you two did yesterday and that you found out that you're also in a marriage contract with him." Pyrrha explained.

"Oh." Velvet said, blushing.

"But now you want to know how to go forward with Jaune. And how to proceed with your relationship with him." Nora said as they all sat down on Jaune's bed.

"Yes." Velvet sighed.

"How much do you like our fearless leader?" Nora asked.

"A lot. I'm not sure when I started to have feelings for him. But after he stood up to Cardin and made him stop bothering him, I felt myself fall for him even more, despite knowing only a few things about him. I just really love Jaune a lot."

"Did you get excited when you learned you would marry him in an arranged marriage contract?" Pyrrha asked, smiling.

"If Coco were here, she would say that me being excited would be an understatement."

"I can imagine since we had the same reaction."

"We could barely hold our excitement when we learned we were going to marry, Jauney." Nora said. "But now you want to know how to go forward and if Jaune returned your feelings."

"Yes." Velvet worriedly said.

"Well, this might devastate you. But you need to listen to everything before you say anything." Pyrrha said, placing her hand on Velvet's shoulder.

"What did he say?"

"Jaune does not have feelings for you yet. And I cannot emphasize the 'yet' enough. He also drove home the fact that his feelings for you might change in the future. And by that, Jaune means he might develop and eventually return your feelings." Pyrrha said.

"I know. He told me that a few times."

"Jaune also told us that he really wants this relationship to work. He really wants everything to work out in the end, not just between you and him, but for all of his wives." Nora said.

"He does?" Velvet asked, hopeful.

"Yes. From what Jaune said, he already thinks of you as a good friend. And maybe eventually a great friend. He wants everything to work out. Jaune also said that he wants to give all of his wives everything he can and give them the lives they deserve."

"I can imagine him saying that. He always puts others before him. That's one of the reasons why I like him."

"Yes. But that kind of comes at a cost." Pyrrha said, confusing Velvet.

"What cost?"

"It's one of his faults. And I think you should know all of them since you're one of his future wives." Nora said. She then took a big breath and was about to tell them but stopped when Velvet interjected.

"You're right. I should know about them. And not just because I'm going to be his future wife but also as a good friend to him. He helped me with my Cardin problem. The least I could do is help him."

"That's the spirit." Pyrrya said, smiling. "And don't worry Velvet. I'm sure Jaune will eventually return your feelings. It might not seem like it right now, but like Jaune said, it might change down the road. And I'm positive they will change."

"Pyrrha's right, Velvet. I'm also sure it will change down the road. But let's take it step by step as if the contracts never happened." Nora added.

"You're right. Thanks, you two." Velvet said, smiling.

"And the first step is learning more about Jaune. So what else would you like to know about him before we move on to his faults?" Pyrrha asked.

"Well. First off." Velvet began.

Outside Jnpr's dorm

"What did I just hear?" Blake asked, more shocked than she had ever been before.

She didn't plan on eavesdropping, but when Blake heard about an arranged contract due to her enhanced hearing, she couldn't help herself. For a moment, Blake thought Pyrrha, Nora, and Velvet were talking about a lousy soap opera they were watching. Yet, she doubted that, considering they kept on referring to Jaune and how they would be his future wives. While Blake knew about Pyrrha's massive crush on Jaune, she didn't expect for Nora also to hold

feelings for him. And now Velvet also has feeling for him that she apparently had for a while. All this just seems so absurd.

"Maybe I'm just hearing things. I should go get ready." Blake said as she entered her team's dorm.

Meanwhile

Vale

"So. Uh." Jaune nervously said while scratching the back of his head.

"You know. You say that a lot." Coco said as she looked over the list of what she planned on doing today.

"Yeah. I. I kind of do. I should really stop."

"Not really. It's what makes you you." Coco said as she put away her list.

"So, what do you have planned?"

"First. We'll get a light snack and some coffee at a nearby cafe. Then, we'll head over to the mall. You honestly need some new clothes if you're going to date Velvet. Not only for that, you do want to impress your future wives, right?"

"Of course."

"Then we need to get you some halfway decent clothes. And while we're at it, we could get you a tuxedo. You're going to need it for your wedding. And maybe some other formal attire in case one of your future wives is a stickler for that kind of thing."

"Fair." Jaune said, not looking forward to shopping for clothes. But he knew he needed new clothes and a suit. And what better person to help him than Beacon's resident fashionista? "What else?"

"After that, we're heading to the weapons shop that I typically go to and pick up a few things I ordered."

"Alright. And I need to get a few things for my weapon since I ran out." Jaune said before remembering something Velvet had told him yesterday. "Oh. Coco?"

"Yes?" She asked, turning to him.

"Velvet told me yesterday that you own a clothing shop. Is that true?"

"Yes. I own a clothing shop. Two shops, to be precise. But I also own a weapons store. However, those are on the other side of town, which makes them inconvenient. That's why I prefer these other shops."

"That's cool." Jaune said with a shrug. "Anyway. After that?"

"After that, we'll do something you want to do since we're first going to do what I need to do."

"Fair. So, where's the cafe?"

"Follow me."

Ten Minutes Later

Cafe

"What would you two like to drink?" The employee asked.

"I'll have a small coffee." Jaune answered.

"What roast would you like it?"

"Uh. Light roast."

"Would you like cream or milk? And sugar or sweetener?"

"Milk and sugar."

"Alright. And you miss?"

"I'll have a red-eye coffee with a double shot of expresso." Coco answered.

"And what coffee would you like to have it with?"

"Vacuo Koffee Light Roast."

"And what would you like to eat?"

"Cream cheese bagel." Jaune answered.

"And I'll have a plain croissant." Coco answered.

"Alright. I'll have your order shortly." The employee said before leaving.

"So." Jaune began, unsure of what to say since Coco had never taken her eyes off him.

"Tell me, Arc. Did you actually have no knowledge of this marriage contract... thing?" Coco asked in a no-nonsense voice.

"No. Up until a few days ago, I had no idea about this at all. Although, I did wish my parents would have told me about this instead of me finding out because of Vale's City Clerk's Office."

"Did your parents always do crazy things like this?"

"Well, they have done crazy things before. But not like this."

"I feel like there is something behind that."

"Not... really. The thing is. From what my parents told me. They made the contracts when I was about six or seven. But at that time, they were at the end of their... adventurous years... to put it lightly."

"And by that, you mean drinking years, don't you?"

"I wouldn't go that far. They didn't like getting drunk, but they did love to drink and party. But they stopped drinking altogether when I was nine."

"Well, it's good they stopped. But do you like to drink?"

"No. I don't drink at all. And I prefer to stay sober."

"Did you ever try any beers, liquors, etc.?"

"I only tried a beer once. But I couldn't get past two sips since, to me, it tasted like bad seltzer water."

"Bad seltzer water?"

"Yeah. That's what it tasted like for me. I'm not sure why, though. But after that, I never had anything else." Jaune answered as the employee returned with their orders.

"Here you go." He said.

"Thanks." Coco and Jaune said.

"Let me know if you need anything else." The employee said before leaving.

"What about drugs." Coco said more than asked as she easily drank her coffee despite it being scalding hot.

'I don't think I can ever do that.' Jaune nervously thought as he could barely hold his drink. "Nope. I'm never doing that. The only drugs that I have ever taken or will take are the ones my doctor prescribed me."

'Hmm.' Coco thought as she took a bite out of her croissant. Despite almost being cliche questions to ask, she had to ask them. She wanted to ensure Velvet would be safe with Jaune. And so far, he

was doing a decent job, and Coco got the answers she wanted. While some might bring up the point that he could be lying, Coco knew Jaune wasn't. She didn't see any tells or signs that he was. Plus, she overheard Team Rwby talk about how bad of a liar Jaune was. *'Alright. So far, so good, Jaune. But this is just the start.'*

"What else do you want to know?" Jaune asked as he took a tentative sip of his coffee. While he wasn't thrilled about being questioned, he understood the reason why Coco was doing it. After all, his parents and older sister, Amber, did the same with Terra.

"Well, this next one is a bit out of left field. Do you know how to take care of children?" Coco asked. While strange, she was confident that Velvet, and possibly some of the others, would want children in the future. But there was another reason. And that coincided with how many sisters Jaune had, along with the fact that Velvet was a rabbit faunus. Let's just say sometimes faunus get more than just animal features.

"Yes. I'm the fifth oldest in my family, and I used to take care of my three younger sisters. And I used to babysit from time to time."

"Including faunus?"

"Actually, aside from my sisters, I primarily babysat faunus. I think only two or three times I babysat some non-faunus kids." Jaune answered after thinking it over.

"That's good. So you know how to take care of children when you eventually have some." Coco said before finishing her coffee. "Do you want kids?"

"Yeah. I would like to have kids. But that would also depend on what the others think. I'm not going to force them if they don't want to have kids."

"Good. Not everyone wants kids for one reason or another." Coco said as she wiped her hands and mouth with her napkin.

"Just like my sister, Amber. She never wanted to have kids. Although, she never said why. But that's her business, not mine."

"Anyway." Coco said, satisfied so far with Jaune's answers to her first set of questions. "Are you done with your food? So we can go."

"Yeah, I'm done. Let me just go inside and pay." Jaune said before getting up and entering the cafe. And as soon as the door closed, Coco pulled out a notepad containing the questions she had written down earlier. She then grabbed a pen and checked some off.

"Alright. Arc passed some of the more standard questions. I don't think I'll need to ask some of the other questions I have since he doesn't seem like the kind of guy to do those things. But he's not out of the woods yet. I'll ask him some more when he's trying out the clothes at the mall." Coco said, slightly impressed that Jaune had not tried to dodge the questions like nearly everyone else she had interviewed before. However, she then remembered something she had to do once they returned to Beacon. "I need to ask Jaune about who else he is marrying. I know Nikos and Valkryie don't have a problem with faunus. The same can be said for most of Team Rwby. But I need to keep an eye on Schnee. Hopefully, whoever else Arc is marrying doesn't have a problem with faunus; otherwise, it won't be pretty for them."

"Okay. So where are we going now, again?" Jaune asked as he returned.

"To the mall. There's a shop there that has some of the better quality clothes on this side of Vale. And it's one of the shops with more realistic pricing than others." Coco answered as she got up and threw out her trash.

"How... expensive are we talking about? For the other stores, I mean."

"Let's put it like this. Remember that store, a long time ago, that earned the nickname 'Whole Paycheck?'"

"Yeah."

"Think like that. One shopping trip there will cost you three weeks of lien."

"Wow. That's expensive." Jaune said, shocked.

"Yeah. Some might argue it would be worth it if the quality were top-notch, but it isn't. I'm honestly baffled at how it's still open." Coco said with a shrug. "Anyway. Let's get going. We don't have all day."

Half an Hour Later

"Okay. I think that's enough for now." Coco said as she threw a final shirt and pants at Jaune.

"Okay." Jaune said as he carried a surprisingly small amount of clothes. He honestly expected there to be a ton more.

"Now, just head inside, and we can get started. Put on a set and come out so I can see it."

"Alright." Jaune said as he entered the changing room while Coco sat on a nearby bench. Closing the curtains, Jaune set the clothes on a chair before changing into the first set. *'This is going to be a long day.'*

"Also, Arc. I hope you don't mind if I ask you a few more questions." Coco said in a voice that told Jaune he didn't really have a choice.

"Shoot."

"This might be slightly redundant. How drastically would you say your life changed?"

"Very drastically." Jaune answered as he exited the changing room.

"Hmm. Yeah. Long sleeves are a no for you. You can put all of them to the side."

"Alright."

"Now. I'm pretty sure your life is going to get a lot more busy. And expensive. Do you have any plans for it?"

"Not a full concrete plan yet. I already have an interview planned for a job that Ren told me about. It doesn't pay the greatest, but the schedule is very flexible. But that's just for the moment. Later on, I plan on getting a full-time job and maybe a side job." Jaune answered as he exited the changing room.

"It's a start. But it will do for now. Honestly, I'm surprised you already have an interview. But like I said, it's a start." Coco said before eyeing Jaune up and down. "Summer and warm weather clothes work better on you. And long pants do suit you as well, especially the black one. The blue one isn't bad, either. Now try the shorts. And the denim jacket."

"Okay."

"Next question. Do you have any backup plans for when something happens?"

"Damn it! I knew I had forgotten something!"

"Wait. You didn't have a backup plan?"

"I did. I have a couple in place so far. Some are emergency funds, natural disasters, and what happens in case the house or houses are destroyed. But that one thing I forgot to think about is what happens should one of our children get lost and what they should do."

"Already thinking about the future. That's good. But you seemed kind of mad at yourself for forgetting that. And I mean more than warranted. Why's that?"

"Um. Let's just say there was a rough patch in my family between my parents and me and my sisters when my parents were in the process of quitting drinking. It was pretty rough. And a plan like that would have saved me, Amber, and Saphron a lot of trouble with our younger siblings."

"Oh." Coco said, not expecting that. "How about we move on?"

"I would appreciate that." Jaune said as he exited the changing room.

"Hmm. Maybe not a denim jacket, but a short jacket would definitely fit you nicely. The shorts I'm not too sure about. Perhaps on really hot days, but other than that, shorts don't seem to suit you."

"Yeah. I was never really a shorts guy, either. Short-sleeved shirts, fine. But short pants, not really."

"Okay. Try the suit vest and slacks."

"Alright. And what's your next question?" Jaune asked as he entered the changing room again.

"Would you do anything for your future wives and children?"

"Of course. Well, within reason, obviously. But still. I would do anything for them. Just like I would do anything for my sisters." Jaune answered as he came out.

"Oh. You also put on the button-up shirt. I have to admit, Arc. You do dress up nicely. We should also get you others but in different colours. Maybe mahogany and blue."

"Thanks." Jaune said. He was honestly surprised at how much he liked the suit.

"Now we just need to find a tie or bowtie."

"Can it be a tie? I never liked bowties."

"Alright. And I think I have a few colours in mind that match perfectly with the suits. And while we're at it, we can get you some belts and shoes." Coco said.

Three Hours Later

"Do come again soon." The cashier said as Jaune grabbed all the bags.

"Oh, we will." Coco said.

'Why? I have enough clothes now to last for years.' Jaune thought as he carried ten bags. Initially, he thought he would only get about three sets of clothes, shoes, and a suit. But he ended up with ten sets of casual clothes, three pairs of shoes, and two suits. "Thanks for the clothes, Coco."

"You're welcome, Arc. And besides, you needed it."

"Anyway." Jaune said, rolling his eyes. "Where to now?"

"The weapons shop. I need to pick up a few things. And you need to get... what did you need again?"

"I need a few things for my sword and shield. And I promised to get Ruby some oil for her weapon since she ran out recently."

"Alright."

Ten Minutes Later

"Okay. We're here. Go get what you need while I'll pick up what I need. And let's meet up at the cashier." Coco said.

"Alright." Jaune said as Coco left.

Sighing, Jaune rolled his shoulders before heading to the section for melee weapons. Thankfully, all the stuff he needed for his weapons was not that hard to find. And the oil Ruby wanted was only an aisle

over. Once Jaune had everything, he decided to look around for a bit to see if there was anything else he might need or wanted to try out. But while he didn't find anything, Jaune did make a mental note to tell his friends about this place as the prices were lower than the usual shop they use.

'Okay. I better head to the cashier now. Coco should already be done or close to being done.' Jaune thought as he made his way to the cashier. But he stopped when he felt his scroll vibrate. Taking it out, Jaune noticed that his sister, Saphron, was calling him. "Hey, Saph. What's up?"

'Oh, nothing much on my end. Well, aside from the fact that I just learned that you're marrying eighteen girls.' Saphron said in an unusually calm voice.

"Oh. Yeah. But, uh. Saphron? Is everything alright? You sound unusually calm about something like this."

'Yeah, I'm fine. I'm just a little tired.'

"Tired? Tired from what?" Jaune asked, confused and slightly worried, not realizing he walked into a trap.

'Tired from the list I made of how to tease you in front of my future sisters-in-law.' Saphron said, barely able to contain her laughter.

"I walked right into that one, didn't I?" Jaune deadpanned.

'Yup.'

"Anyway. Did you call just to tell me that? Or did you have something else to say?"

'Well, I wanted to tell you that first. But yes, I have a few other things I need to tell you.'

"What are they?"

'Well, for starters. Mom and Dad got the list for when you will be meeting your future wives.'

"That's great. So I can plan accordingly."

'Yup. Most of them you will meet in the coming week and next week. Some might be a bit later, though. I will send you the list after we finish talking.'

"Thanks, Saph. But wait. Why didn't Mom and Dad send it to me?"

'Oh. They were busy, so they asked me to send it to you since it was on the table.'

"Okay. That makes sense. Anything else?"

'They told me to tell you that one of your future wives uses a different alias now. She doesn't go by the name on the contract anymore. But she does remember it.'

"Do you know which one? Or what is the alias?"

'Nope. Neither do they.'

"Great. So one mystery person and two criminals."

'Wait. Criminals?'

"Yeah. Two of my future wives are bouncers and technically criminals. I'm not looking forward to this. That's why I asked my teammate to get some more medical supplies."

'Well, good luck, Jaune. But I'm sure you can handle them. After all, you grew up with six chaotic sisters.'

"Thanks, Saph. But don't count yourself out. You were just as chaotic as the others."

'Who says I was? I still am. And I'll prove it once you come home.'

"Oh, that reminds me. I'm bringing my team with me this week."

'That's great. I've been wanting to see who got paired up with my little bro.'

"And two of them are my future wives."

'That must have been awkward when they found out about the marriage contracts.'

"Not really. But long story short, we love each other now."

'Oh, I'm definitely teasing you three when you get here. It's great. But I'm definitely going to tease you three like Amber did to me and Terra.'

"We're not looking forward to it. Anyway. Is that it?" Jaune asked, rolling his eyes while chuckling.

'Yeah. For now, anyway. See you when you get here, Jaune.'

"See you, Saph." Jaune said before ending the call.

"Who was that, Arc?" Coco asked, startling Jaune.

"It was my sister, Saphron."

"How many sisters do you have? Velvet told me it was seven."

"Yup. I do have seven sisters."

"That must have been a pain growing up."

"Not really. Chaotic as hell, with lots of yelling, but I wouldn't say it was a pain."

"Do they know about the marriage contracts?"

"Well, Saphron does now. I'm not sure about the others. But they might learn soon enough."

"Well, hopefully, they take it well. But speaking of which, did I hear you say you were going to visit your family this week?"

"Yup. My team and I are going to visit them."

"So, Nikos and Valkyrie are going to be meeting their future in-laws this week."

"Yeah. We agreed it would be good to meet them as soon as possible. But even if these contracts weren't happening, I would have still liked them to meet my family."

"That's a good idea. Get it out of the way as soon as possible, but also because there might not be another chance for a while." Coco said before gaining a thoughtful look. "I just thought of something."

"What's that?" Jaune asked, curious.

"You think it will be alright if Velvet and I tag along? Because, like you said, it would be good to meet our future in-laws as soon as possible."

"Yeah, it would be fine. But what about Fox and Yatsuhashi?"

"They'll be fine. They could use the time together."

"Alright, then. I'll call my family later to tell them you and Velvet are also coming."

"Thanks, future husband." Coco said with a wink, causing Jaune to roll his eyes. "Anyway. You got everything you need?"

"Yup. You?"

"Yes. I got everything I ordered. Now let's go pay for it."

Ten Minutes Later

"Okay. That was far cheaper than I expected." Jaune said as he and Coco exited the shop.

"That's why I always come here, Arc." Coco said.

"So, now where?"

"Actually. It's your turn. We did all the things I needed to do. So you decide now."

"Okay. Since it's the afternoon already, how about we get some dessert before we head back to Beacon?"

"Are you saying that just because most desserts go well with coffee?" Coco asked with a smirk.

"No. There's this dessert place that opened up two months ago, and I've been wanting to try it for a while."

"Alright. Let's head. And we should pick up something for our teammates as well."

Ten Minutes Later

"Okay. I wasn't expecting this place to look as nice as it does. And bonus points for not smelling as sickly sweet as some other places." Coco said as she ate her biscotti with coffee.

"Yeah. It's much better than I expected." Jaune agreed as he enjoyed a Munchies Milkshake.

"I should probably take my team here as a treat every now and then."

"And I should probably keep my team away from this place."

"Why?" Coco asked, curious.

"Well, Pyrrha isn't much for very sweet foods or snacks. But despite what she might tell you, she loves chocolate. However, this place is too sweet. Ren doesn't like sweets, and the most I've seen him have was a peppermint candy cane with some hot chocolate. As for Nora, I don't think I need to explain."

"Didn't she go into a sugar rush from something that had almost no sugar?"

"Sort of. It had more sugar than that. But it still wasn't much."

"That's nice that you look out for your team. But then again, that's what a leader is supposed to do." Coco said before taking a sip of her coffee. "Anyway. I asked you enough questions for today. Now it's your turn. Do you have any for me?"

"A few." Jaune answered.

"What are they?"

"First. What got you into fashion?"

"No offense, Arc. But I'm not ready to answer that question yet as it's a bit personal."

"Alright. Then how about this? Is coffee really your favorite drink?"

"Yeah." Coco chuckled. "Despite what my name and my team's name might imply, coffee isn't my favorite drink. It is my second favorite drink, though."

"What is your favorite drink?"

"I don't recall the name of the drink. It was very creamy and smooth and had a fruity and nutty taste to it. But it was about a year before I came to Beacon since I last had it." Coco answered, racking her head to the drink's name but coming up short. "What else?"

"Where did you get your weapon?"

"You mean Gianduja?"

"Yes."

"That's a bit of a fun story. When I was, I think, nine or ten, I was in the process of finding the weapon that I wanted to use. But as I was walking around town, some Grimm invaded the village. I didn't want to be left out of the fight, so I ran to the nearest weapons store, which just so happened to be next to me. I got in, grabbed the first weapon I saw, and used it to help fight off the Grimm invasion. It was only after the fight that I realized that I had grabbed a purse/minigun hybrid. The owners did let me keep it since I prevented their shop from getting destroyed."

"That was nice of them. But what kind of store sold purse/minigun hybrids? And what was its name?"

"The store was called Defiance Industries for some reason. They specialized in making powerful weapons, albeit unconventional weapons. But not everyone could wield them, let alone afford them. And that's partially the reason why they went out of business."

"That's too bad. I know Ruby, and maybe Nora, would have loved to visit the store."

"Yeah. Any other questions?"

"Just one."

"What is it?"

"Was there any other profession you wanted to be in aside from being a huntress?"

"What? Don't think I can make it as one?" Coco asked, raising an eyebrow.

"Uh, no. I didn't mean it like that. I know you will become one. And a great one at that. I'm pretty sure you might be able to surpass Glynda."

"While I appreciate the compliment, flattery might get you ahead with some of your other future wives; it won't get you anywhere with me." Coco said, chuckling.

"I know. It's just that most people have different dream jobs they want to achieve throughout their lives. I want to know if you had any."

"Oh. Okay, I get it now. Honestly, for most of my life, I wanted to become a huntress. But I have thought about becoming a barista or something with fashion at a few points in my life. Why?"

"More curious than anything. Everyone has different dream jobs at one point or another."

"True. That's very common. But what about you?"

"Well, I always wanted to be a huntsman. But at times, I've always wanted to become a baker."

"Wait. You know how to bake?" Coco asked, slightly surprised.

"Yeah, I do."

"Neat. Maybe you can bake us something in the future."

"Of course."

"Anyway. This was nice. But we better get Beacon. It's getting late, and your friends are probably getting nervous."

"Yeah. I already received a couple of texts."

"And we need to go over a few things when we return."

"Like what?" Jaune asked, curious.

"I'll tell you when we get back."

"Alright."

Getting up, they paid for their food before grabbing the bags and heading to the bullheads.

One Hour Later

"Okay. I'm back." Jaune said as he entered his team's dorm.

"How was your day, Jaune?" Pyrrha asked, relieved to see Jaune in one piece.

"Pretty good."

"Was it tiring?" Nora asked.

"Only a little."

"Do you still need the supplies?" Ren asked, pointing to the medical supplies.

"No. I don't need it. I just need a nap right now." Jaune answered with a yawn.

Knock Knock

"I wonder who's that." Pyrrha said.

"Let me see." Jaune said as he opened the door. But he was surprised at what he saw. "Oh. Hello, Team Cfvy."

"Hey, Jaune. Can we come in?" Coco asked.

"Uh. Sure." Jaune asked, confused, as he opened the door fully.

"Thanks." Coco said before. "Hello, everyone."

"Hi." The others said, equally confused and shocked.

"Sorry if this sound rude, but why are you all here? Did something happen?" Jaune asked as he closed the door.

"Remember what I said at the place on how we needed to go over something?" Coco asked.

"Uh, yes. But you never told me what."

"Right. We need to go over who else you are marrying. We already know about me, Velvet, Nikos, and Valkryie here. But we don't know who else."

"Right. It's best you all know." Jaune said as he went over to his desk, pulled out the contracts, and looked through them but noticed two were missing. "Wait. Two-"

"-are missing. I know. I have them." Coco said, showing Jaune the contracts.

"Okay." Jaune said, taking them. "As you said, I'm marrying you, Velvet, Pyrrha, and Nora."

"Right."

"But I'm also marrying all of Team Rwby."

"Okay. At least you know them." Yatsuhashi said.

"But would you say you're good friends with them?" Fox asked.

"Uh." Jaune began, scratching his head.

"He's good friends with Ruby. Yang, he's... friends with. But that's only because he's good friends with Ruby. And Ruby and Yang are sisters." Ren explained.

"What about Blake and Weiss?" Yatsuhashi asked.

"Weiss... tolerates him. But I wouldn't say they are friends. They are more like acquittances that don't mind each other's company." Pyrrha answered.

"And Blake?" Velvet asked.

"That's even less certain. Only after Jaune stood up for you, Velvet, did Jaune and Blake have an actual conversation. Honestly, we're uncertain of how Blake sees Jaune. Maybe, at best, a somewhat decent friend. No offense, Jaune." Nora said.

"None taken. Even I don't know if Blake sees me as a friend." Jaune said, shrugging.

"But still. At least we know them." Coco said, still uncertain of Schnee. "Who else?"

"There's the Malachite Twins." Jaune answered.

"Wait. Do your parents know they are criminals?" Yatsuhashi asked, concerned.

"I'm not sure."

"You best be careful around them. They can tear you to shreds in an instant." Fox said.

"I'll keep that in mind. Next is Emerald Sustrai."

"We don't know her." Velvet said.

"May Zedong."

"May?" Yatsuhashi asked, surprised.

"You know her?" Ren asked, curious.

"Not personally. But I have met one of her teammates. She's from Team BRNZ. From what Brawnz, their leader, told me. May is

incredibly meek and strongly prefers to remain out of the spotlight. Although, she is one of the best markswomen out there. You might have a tough time getting her to open up. But she is nice once you get to know her."

"That's good." Jaune said. "Anyway. Next is Winter, Wiess's sister."

'Okay. Looks like I have two Schnee's to watch out for.' Coco thought.

"We can't say anything about her since this is the first time we heard of her." Fox said.

"Neon Katt."

"We don't know her." Velvet said.

"Reese Chloris."

"We don't know her." Yatsuhashi said.

"Arslan Altan."

"We don't know her." Fox said.

"Ciel Soleil."

"We don't know her." Yatsuhashi said.

"Who's the last one?" Coco asked, curious. While some she didn't know, she was glad most of them didn't seem bad or were friendly toward faunus. However, that didn't mean she was going to let her guard down.

"The last one is Trivia Vanille."

"I don't know that one." Fox said.

"Me neither." Velvet said.

"It doesn't ring a bell for us either." Nora said.

"But it does sound somewhat-" Yatsuhashi began before Coco cut him off.

"YOU'RE MARRYING NEO!? THE PARTNER OF ROMAN TORCHWICK!" Coco shouted, shocked.

Notes:

I didn't think I have to say this. But here it is. PLEASE STOP SPAMMING ME WITH MESSAGES ABOUT NORA'S, EMERALD'S, AND NEO'S PARENTS. I KNOW that Nora's parents abandoned her Grimm attacked their village and are dead. I also KNOW that Emerald's parents are dead. And I KNOW that Neo's parents were pieces of crap and I KNOW they are also dead. But for THIS STORY, Nora's parents are alive. HOWEVER, they will ONLY make a BRIEF OFF-SCREEN CONVERSATION! AND THAT ALEADY HAPPENED IN CHAPTER TWO! THEY WON'T MAKE ANOTHER APPEARNCE! Emerald's and Neo's parents will REMAIN DEAD in this story. Emerald will FIND A LETTER from her parents that they wrote BEFOE THEY DIED! As for Neo, A THIRD PARTY is in the play for her marriage contract. AND BEFORE ANYONE JUMPS TO FUCKING CONCLUSIONS, IT IS NOT ROMAN TORCHWICK! HE HAD NO PART IN THIS! SO, PLEASE! STOP SPAMMING WITH THAT! I KNOW!

***SIGHS* The Next Chapter will be Neo or someone else.**

Chapter 8

WAIT, WHAT! HOW MANY I'M MARRYING!?

Chapter 8: **A Sweet/Bitter Revelation followed by a Miniature Ice-Cream Surprise.**

"NEO!" Everyone shouted.

"Wait. I'm marrying Neo?" Jaune asked, shocked and worried.

"Apparently." Coco said, still trying to process what she had just realized.

"Wait. Are you sure it's Neo?" Pyrrha asked.

"Cause we never heard that name associated with her." Ren added.

"Neither have we." Velvet said.

"And for good reason." Coco said.

"Why?" Yatsuhashi asked, curious.

"Well, that's a bit of a story. First, let me just say this. Neo had one of the shitiest childhoods I had heard about in a long time."

"How so?" Jaune asked, now worried for Neo.

"Simple. You all know that Neo has heterochromia, right?"

"What? What's that?" Nora asked.

"It's a condition where you have two different eye colors. In most cases, it's hereditary." Velvet explained.

"Okay, I get it."

"Anyway. What none of you probably know is that Neo is also mute." Coco said.

"Wait. Neo's mute? I thought she was just a quiet person." Pyrrha asked.

"Yeah. She's mute. But that brings something else up. And Jaune might know, considering why he didn't want a divorce."

"Wait. How would- OH. Yeah. I. Yeah." Jaune began before realization set in. "I get it."

"What do you get?" Velvet asked, confused.

"Remember how I said that while my family was very open-minded, others aren't?"

"Uh. Yeah."

"First, not all families are like this. And these trains of thought/beliefs are slowly fading away. But to put it bluntly. Some families view these conditions and other ailments as... a sort of shame or embarrassment to the family's name, even though they didn't have any control over it. As a result, they would often do horrendous things to the children. And that is putting it *VERY LIGHTLY* . Again, these ways have been slowly fading away, but it has happened, and some families still do it today."

"OH." Velvet said, shifting uncomfortably as the weight of what Jaune said set in.

"Yeah."

"Arc's right. From what little I could gather, Neo's parents were pieces of shit. And that's putting it mildly. But when you put all this together, and the illegal activities they did, it's not at all surprising that they were killed in their manor." Coco said.

"What did they do?" Pyrrha asked.

"I'm not entirely sure since nearly all documents were destroyed. But I know her father was a corrupt politician. But to what extent, I'm not sure."

"Do you know who killed them?" Yatsuhashi asked.

"No. Again, there aren't many documents remaining. And what remains is bare bones. But I would put my lien on Neo killing her parents." Coco answered.

"Do you know how old Neo was when that happened?" Nora asked.

"And what happened after?" Jaune asked.

"No. Again, the documents were bare bones. But they did say Neo would have been around eighteen when that happened. But as for what happened, I have no idea." Coco answered. "However, we can confidently say that she changed her name to leave her past behind and eventually joined Roman."

"This just got a lot more complicated." Jaune sighed.

"And dangerous." Ren said with a smirk.

"That's an understatement." Yatsuhashi said.

"Wait. I'm not sure if this is true since I overheard this a while back. But doesn't Yang have a rivalry with Neo?" Fox asked.

"AND WITH THE MALACHITE TWINS." Pyrrha shouted, remembering what Yang did to the bar the twins worked at.

"Okay. You have a lot of work on your hands, Jaune." Yatsuhashi said.

"I know." Jaune said, burying his head into his hands.

"But you still have us to help you, Jaune. You're not alone." Velvet said, cuddling into him, earning smiles from her team and the rest of

Team JNPR.

"Thanks." Jaune said before letting out a yawn. "But right now. We should all head to sleep since it's past curfew."

"Wow. Time flies." Ren said as he checked the time on his scroll.

"We better get to sleep then." Pyrrha said.

"Yeah. We don't need Glynda to be mad at us." Nora added. But none of them noticed the smirks Team Cfvy and Jaune had.

"Neither at us. Come on. Good night, Team JNPR." Coco said as they left. However, before Velvet left, she kissed Jaune on the cheek before dashing out of the room.

"Um. Yeah. Let's head to sleep." Jaune said, still slightly uncomfortable with the display of affection Velvet gave him as he still saw her as a friend.

"And tomorrow, we can figure out what to do with Neo." Pyrrha assured as everyone got ready.

'I honestly wonder how I would even meet Neo. No one knows where she goes or where she is. And Neo probably wouldn't even want a marriage. For now, I think it's best to forget about her and worry about my other future wives.' Jaune thought as he got into bed. But as soon as he did, Pyrrha and Nora slid into his bed and snuggled into him before falling asleep. And just like that, all his worries vanished in an instant. But Jaune remembered something before sleep took him. *'I need to file the request for a bigger bed so Nora, Pyrrha, and I can sleep together comfortably.'*

Meanwhile

Somewhere in Vale

'Today was a good day. I stole some dust and lien, messed with a few Shade students, and got a guy in trouble with his wife. But best

of all, I managed to snag a rare jumbo-size tub of Neapolitan ice cream. Now if only we had some decent coffee to go with it instead of that cheap liquor.' A girl with pink and brown hair happily thought as she walked down the empty streets of Vale.

However, what stood out most prominently was her eyes. They were pink and brown. Yet, despite being on the news and talked about a lot, very few would even realize that this girl was Neo, the notorious partner of the infamous Roman Torchwick. But even if they were people out and they did recognize her, none of them would have approached her or dared call the police as they knew Neo could swiftly end their life. Nevertheless, while Neo wouldn't have minded having some practice with Hush, the silence allowed her to ponder what she would do tomorrow since her next *job* wouldn't happen until next week.

Initially, the *job* that consisted of *liberating* some valuable items was supposed to happen early last week. However, it got pushed back twice because things came up, and security was too tight. Then, when things calmed down, Neo prepared herself to infiltrate the place. But then, from out of nowhere, Roman pushed back the date and wouldn't explain why when she asked. The lack of answers did piss Neo off, but she couldn't help but remain curious about Roman's sudden change of behavior and attitude toward her. The only time he acted like this was when they narrowly dodged a shady deal with a mysterious dealer. Nevertheless, while she was annoyed at the lack of answers, Neo wasn't going to let her free time go to waste.

'Maybe I could try that dessert shop? Or maybe I could find a movie to watch? Nah, there's nothing good in theaters now. Eh, I'll probably come up with something later while I'm enjoying my well-deserved ice cream.' Neo thought as she continued making her way toward the hideout that she and Roman were currently using as their makeshift 'home.'

Meanwhile

Hideout

"What am I going to do?" Roman Torchwick asked himself as he rubbed his face with his hand. Letting out a frustrated sigh, he picked up his glass of rum and took a long sip, hoping with all his might that it would lessen his migraine. Yet, to his dismay, it did nothing to alleviate it.

Despite having a 'decent' childhood and being 'relatively' young, Roman could confidently say he had seen it all. He has seen bad and good, crazy and sane, reasonable and entirely out of left-field scenarios and options. Even taking on a mute ice-cream-themed girl that could kill anyone at a moment's notice and appear completely innocent a second later as a partner didn't faze him in the slightest. And after a few rough weeks of learning sign language, they became great 'friends' and partners in crime. Roman honestly thought the thing that could take him off-guard was Ozpin. However, that all changed this last month.

"Okay, Roman. Let's lay everything out. On the one hand, Neo does give up a few things she loves to do but has a secure future. But on the other hand, Neo can continue doing what she loves, yet her future remains uncertain. I never thought this would happen to me." Roman said before cupping his face again. "And it looks like I'll have to give Neo the long overdue conversation about her future as soon as she returns."

While the news outlets loved to tell everyone that he lived life in the moment, they weren't wrong. It made life more adventurous, dangerous, and thrilling. However, that did not mean Roman never thought about the future. And one thing Roman always thought about was what will he do when he was too old to continue living a life of crime. Something that so many forgot was that criminals also grew old and weary. And they needed a plan for when or should they reach that age. But, unfortunately, that was a lot more challenging than anyone expected. And often, those plans went to waste as the people that made them died. However, that wasn't always the case, as Junior was a great example of a criminal who had his entire life set.

But that caused Roman to nearly smack himself upside the head. While he was still setting up a plan for himself later in life, Neo wasn't. While she does think ahead, more than himself, she hadn't started making a plan for when she reached that age. Yet, Roman couldn't blame anyone but himself for this, as Neo, just like himself, likes to live in the moment. Not to mention, he never told her about this. And not many criminals even think about this until too late. While he could adjust his plans to include Neo, Roman knew what was much easier said than done. Additionally, they might become too big of a target later on. While he wouldn't admit it out loud, especially in front of his partner, Roman didn't want to see Neo get thrown into Atlas prison. He had been in one before, and it was downright inhumane.

But they could make it work if there were no other options. After all, they had been 'living together' for a good amount of years already. It would be barely any different than it is now. Initially, Roman planned on having this talk with Neo after they gathered a bit more lien, and they could go on from there. However, that all changed when Roman 'found/received' a surprise piece of paper he never expected to have Neo's real name on. Yet, while shocking, to say the least, it also provided a better, alternative route Neo could take. While far less adventurous and thrilling, it meant there was far less Neo had to worry about, and her future was more or less secured.

"I never thought I would see Neo's actual name on a marriage contract. And I have seen a lot. But it does give Neo another option. And at the very least, it's to a family that's actually humble and respectable than to those scumbags that acts like saints but are no better than the Grimm." Roman said as he finished his drink. The burning from it did nothing to soothe his mind.

Click

"Hey, Neo. I see you've been busy." Roman said, smirking as his partner entered the room with her trademark 'angelic' smile. But anyone that knew Neo knew that her smile held devious meanings.

'Yup. It was a fun day. And I got some ice cream.' Neo signed, causing Roman to roll his eyes at how much his partner loved ice cream. But it also reminded him to warn the kid on the contract about what happens if someone messes with Neo's ice cream.

"Did you mess with anyone?"

'A few Shade students that tried their luck. And a guy in front of his wife. Or girlfriend. It was hard to tell. I also stole some lien and dust.'

"Did anyone catch you?"

'Nope. No one saw a thing. And even if they did, they would have seen someone that doesn't exist.

"Good."

'Anyway. I'll be in my room. Also, do we have some decent coffee?'

"Unforutnly, not. We only have that instant brand knockoff that Atlas makes."

'Ugh. No thanks. I rather have that weird spicy snack flavor soda. Anyway, see you tomorrow.'

"Actually, Neo. Put away the ice cream. We need to talk. It's important." Roman said, surprising Neo.

'About what? The future heist?'

"No. Something far more important."

'Okay. Give me a second.' Neo said before dashing into the kitchen and returning a second later. ***'Alright. What is it?'***

"I know you don't like when people beat around the bush, so I'm just going to cut to the chase. Where do you see yourself in twenty years

and later?"

'Uh. Is this like a job interview or something?' Neo signed, confused.

"Neo. Take it seriously. Answer the question." Roman said.

'Alright. But I'm not sure. Maybe with you.'

"So, in other words, you haven't planned anything *YET* for the long term. In other words, for when you're much older."

'More or less. It has crossed my mind before. But I never gave it too much thought. Why?'

"Well. Honestly, I want to smack myself for not having this talk earlier. But, Neo, you know we're criminals. And as such, some things that are quite easy for non-criminals are not so easy for us. Like going to a restaurant in broad daylight or buying a house."

'Uh, I guess. Again. Where are you going with this?' Neo signed, sightly curious and annoyed.

"We, and by that, I mean you, need to start thinking about the future. I already have a plan in the works for how to spend my last years on this dusty planet. And with some tweaks, I can have it include you if that is what you want. But as I told you long ago, not everything works out in the end or as intended. You need to have your own plan in case things go south for either of us."

'So, you're-'

"I'm not trying to get rid of you or anything like that. I'm simply telling you, Neo. Because we're criminals, we need to think about this more than others. So, I'm asking you this. Do you have any plans yet?"

'You have a good point that our lives are a bit more difficult in some parts. And I sometimes don't feel like disguising everywhere I go. But to answer your question. No, I don't have

any plans yet. But I should start making them soon.' Neo signed after giving it some thought.

While Neo didn't like being talked to like some misguided teenager in need of guidance, Roman was right. Despite being far more fun, their lives were a bit more complicated. That's why she always disguised herself when going out. Well, almost always. While Neo wouldn't mind spending the rest of her life with her friend and partner in crime, Roman, she knew things could very easily go south. Plus, there might be a chance she would want to live on her own. However, a question came to mind that she needed to ask.

'I feel like you have something else to tell me.' Neo signed.

"Yes. Something came up not that long ago. Something I wasn't expecting at all." Roman answered.

'What is it?'

"This. And before you say anything, I had nothing to do with it. I only learned about it this month." Roman said as he showed Neo the marriage contract.

'A marriage contract?' Neo signed, slightly confused. But she became even more confused and a little angry when she saw her birth name on the contract. While she hated seeing the name, she was more curious about how it got there. Neo knew Roman knew her birth name. But she also knew that Roman would never use it for anything. That meant he had no part in it. And from what Neo could tell, it wasn't forged. It was a genuine arranged marriage contract.

"Yes. An arranged marriage contract between you and a kid named Jaune Arc."

'Did he-'

"No. The kid was only six or seven when the contracts were made. He had no idea about them until recently."

'How did you know that? Wait a minute. How did you even get your hands on this?'

"Junior called me."

'Junior? I thought you guys weren't friends?' Neo signed, confused.

"We're not friends. We're acquaintances at best. But we will warn each other something big is coming our way. Anyway. He called me a while back, saying he found some rather interesting paperwork he discovered that I should take a look at. And I nearly spat out my drink when I saw it. As for how I know about when it was made, let's just leave it like this. There's a reason why Junior is such a renowned information broker."

'I'll take your word for it. But one thing I don't get is... those people's signatures. They would never have agreed to something like this.'

"I know. I was confused too. It seemed just so... not them." Roman carefully said before taking a sip of his drink. "So, I traded in all the favors I had with Junior so he could find out why they did this or what happened."

'Did he get anything?' Neo signed, curious.

"Yes. It took him a while, but he did find out the answer."

'What is it then?'

"Your... those people did sign it. But they were not exactly in the right mind."

'I'm... not following.'

"Do you remember your aunt on that asshole's side?"

'You mean Aunt Ornella?'

"Yes. Her."

'Well, I don't recall or know her too well. All I know is that she showed me some care when I was about eight and taught me some sign language. And that she 'mysteriously' died in her room with some contrabanded dust on the bed. But that's all I know.'

"Well. From what Junior found out, she did something else before she died."

'And what's that?'

"The details are a bit fuzzy. But this is what it is. Ornella knew she was going to die. But she didn't want to resign you to living with those... wastes of space forever or be forced into a marriage with people like them. So, she got into contact with some people she trusted. And after some very careful manipulation and deceit, among other things, she 'convinced' them to sign the contract."

'Did they even know what it was for?'

"Again, the details are a bit fuzzy. But from what Junior managed to dig up, they didn't know at the time. They only realized what it was a few years later."

'But wouldn't they have canceled it?'

"I would have assumed so. But then I read the fine print. They couldn't have canceled it. The terms say that the... previous generation cannot terminate the marriage contract nor change anything about it under any circumstances. And even if they went to the Clerk's office directly, they still wouldn't be able to do anything."

'It seems like Ornella covered most of the bases cause I don't think she envisioned what happened to them.'

"Seems like it."

'But can it be canceled?'

"Yes. There is a way to terminate the contract."

'Good. But how does this tie in with the future thing?'

"I was about to get to that." Roman answered before sighing. "I want you to consider this as an option."

'WHAT!?' Neo signed, shocked and slightly furious. ***'WHY WOULD I CONSIDER THAT!? THIS IS RIDICULOUS!'***

"I know, Neo. But I'm not saying you have to choose this option. I'm just saying that it is another option you have."

'AGAIN! THIS IS RIDICULOUS! YOU JUST SAID I SHOULD THINK ABOUT MY FUTURE! WHY SHOULD I SEAL IT OFF WITH AN ARRANGED MARRIAGE?! HECK! I HAVEN'T EVEN BEEN IN A REAL RELATIONSHIP YET!'

"Neo. Calm down. As I said, you don't have to choose this option. You can be with me, although that would take some adjustments, or you can figure out something on your own. And if you do choose that, I'll still help you. I'm just saying take this arranged marriage as another option that you have."

'Alright. Fine.' Neo signed while grumbling. ***'Do you even know anything about them?'***

"Not personally. But I do know about them." Roman calmly answered, surprising Neo.

'Wait. You don't know them personally. But you know about them? How does that make sense?'

"The Arc Family was one of the families that helped the Great King end the Great War. They were respected and well-known for their humbleness and kindness toward all."

'But that doesn't mean the current generation is like that. After all, things can change.'

"Of course, things can change. That's why I sent some competent help to spy on both the family and the kid to see if they are still as good as their ancestors."

'And? What did they find out?'

"Aside from a rough patch years ago, the family is just like their ancestors. They're nice, humble, and pretty open-minded. Although, they are about ten times as chaotic as their ancestors."

'Okay. Not sure if I can handle that much chaos. But what was the rough patch?' Neo signed, curious.

"The parents like to drink. But they did it for fun, not to get drunk. The most they allowed themselves was to get tipsy when they knew their kids were safe. But they stopped when they noticed their drinking was affecting their relationship with their kids."

'They don't anymore? Like, at all?'

"Yes. Not a single drop."

'Alright. What about the kid? And how old is he, anyway?'

"He's seventeen, about to be eighteen. And despite being a bit naive, he's not bad. A bit dense at times."

'Great. A high schooler.' Neo signed while rolling her eyes.

"Actually, he's a huntsman-in-training."

'Even worse. I bet he has a big ego like those Shade Students.'

"I thought so too. But it turns out he's almost the complete opposite. The kid's nice and friendly. He puts others before himself and practically has no ego. Although he does sometimes puts himself

down but his friends have helped get rid of that for the most part. And he rather get hurt than let his friends get in trouble."

'So, a rare soul in a sea of bullshit, egotistical people.'

"Well. That's one way of putting it. But yeah. He's not at all like those Shade students you messed with earlier. He's an all-around good kid that won't give you trouble."

'So, kind of like the ideal kid that parents want their daughter to date?'

"I wouldn't go that far. But still. Just consider this as an option. And if it doesn't work out, I'll terminate it, and we can act like it never happened."

'Alright. I'll consider it. I'm not thrilled about it, but I'll think about it.'

"Be sure that you do. The quicker we get started, the better." Roman said.

'Okay. Anything else?'

"No. That's it for now."

'Alright. If you need me, I'll be in my room enjoying my ice cream.' Neo signed before getting up and heading to her room. But not before also grabbing the contract to look it over later.

"Okay. Good night, Neo." Roman said with a sigh. And once Neo was out of the room, he pulled out a bottle of whiskey and poured himself a drink before taking a long sip. "I really hope Neo considers this. This can open up so many doors for her. And even a clean record if she wants where she doesn't have to deal with sketchy scum anymore. I just hope the kid can handle her. And I hope Neo doesn't freak out when she discovers he's marrying seventeen other

girls. Poor kid. I should probably get some energy drinks and pills for him."

Ding

"But speaking of sketchy scum." Roman said as he finished his drink before getting up to go meet some of his new clients.

The Next Day

Beacon Academy

"Okay. So when are we heading to visit your family?" Velvet asked as she, Coco, and Team Jnpr sat at a table in the cafeteria.

"It's Wednesday. And we have classes next week. So, we have to head there tomorrow. That way, we can have some time to relax, explore, and get what we need to do done." Jaune answered.

"That doesn't give us a lot of time to prepare, though." Coco said.

"I know. But next week we have classes. And just the weekend isn't enough."

"Jaune's right. Just talking with our future in-laws might take most of the day." Pyrrha said.

"How far is to your hometown, Jaune?" Ren asked.

"About five hours." Jaune answered.

"Oh. So, that's why you made the flight at six-thirty in the morning." Nora said.

"Yup. That way, we will arrive at around noon. And we will still have time to do some things."

"What time is the return flight?" Coco asked.

"Six on the Sunday."

"Alright. So we will have about two-and-a-half to three days of fun in your town before coming back."

"Yup."

"What's the weather like in your hometown, Jaune?" Velvet asked.

"Sunny, and the temperatures are usually in the eighties."

"That's good. Maybe we can go to the beach if your town has one." Pyrrha suggested.

"My town has a few beaches. But I know the best one there, so we can have privacy and great waves if any of you want to surf."

"We can even have a picnic." Velvet suggested while her mind drifted to things less appropriate, which caused a blush to form on her cheeks.

"Of course. I know of some decent restaurants nearby where we can get food for the picnic."

"Is there anything else we need to know about your town, Jaune?" Coco asked, smirking as she knew what was going through Velvet's head.

"Uh. Not really. But, uh, just keep your huntsmen-in-training licenses on you if you bring your weapons. Our town has a local militia alongside some huntsmen. And they have been a little on edge recently."

"Why? Did something happen?" Nora asked.

"There's been reports of a thief going around stealing dust and some other things. They have been trying to catch the thief but have had no luck yet."

"Do you know what else they have been stealing?" Ren asked.

"Only minor things. And some weird ones."

"Like?" Pyrrha asked.

"Party things. Cameras. Some silverware and dishes."

"That makes no sense. Why would anyone steal that?" Velvet asked, thoroughly confused.

"Yeah, it doesn't. But the leader of the militia is worried this is just a distraction for something bigger. And that the thief might try to steal something from them as soon as they let their guard down."

"We should probably keep our weapons on us then. And keep anything we bring in Arc's house." Coco said.

"Yeah." The others agreed.

"Anything else we need to know, Jaune?" Ren asked.

"No. I would say that's it."

"Alright then. We should start getting ready then since we have to head to bed early tonight. And we know time will fly today." Coco said.

"Right." The others agreed.

"I should also head into Vale now to finish getting some supplies I need. Do you guys need anything while I'm out?" Jaune asked as they got up.

"Uh. No." The others answered.

"Oh. Yes. There's one thing you can bring. Well, a few things." Coco said.

"What are they?" Jaune asked, curious.

"Since it's going to be sunny and we'll be at the beach, we're going to need some Aloe Vera."

"Right. I forgot about that. And what are the others?"

"Chargers for scrolls. And by that, I mean those charging converter chargers."

"I'm pretty sure my family has some. But I'll look around for them."

"Thanks."

"Anything else?"

"Oh. Don't forget your motion sickness pills. A fresh shipment just arrived at the pharmacy we use." Ren said.

"Right. I nearly forgot about that. Thanks for reminding me. Anyway, I'll see you guys later." Jaune said before leaving.

"And we should start getting ready ourselves. And help Jaune prepare while we're at it." Ren said.

"Right. Come on, bun-bun. We need to finish packing and picking out clothes to impress our future in-laws." Coco said before dragging out a blushing Velvet. But whether it was because of what Coco said or something Velvet thought, the others were unsure.

"This is certainly going to be an interesting week." Pyrrha said, chuckling.

"It is." Ren agreed.

"Do you think we'll meet any of Jaune's other future wives in his hometown?" Nora asked.

"I doubt it since he didn't know any of the names. But then again, they could have moved there while he was here." Pyrrha answered.

"True."

"Speaking of which. We should take our weapons with us, just in case. And while we're at it, we can help the militia capture the thief." Ren said.

"Right." The others said before heading to their dorm.

Meanwhile

Hideout

"Morning, Neo." Roman said as he finished his brunch.

'Morning. Do we have anything scheduled for today?' Neo signed as she grabbed some ice cream.

"Well, I have to meet up with a potential business client later today. But aside from that, we have nothing."

'Good.'

"Why? Got some plans today? Or are you just going to mess with some others again?"

'I thought about what you told me yesterday, especially the contract option.'

"And?" Roman asked, raising an eyebrow as he was not expecting that. He honestly expected Neo just to tear up the contract.

'While I'm not thrilled about this, I figured I might as well meet the kid.'

"Good. And as I said, if it doesn't work out, we'll terminate the contract and act like it never happened."

'Which, I think, will happen, honestly.'

"Most likely."

'Also, before I leave. Mind helping with the contract?'

"Uh, sure. What do you need help with?" Roman asked, curious.

'Well, it's not exactly with the contract. Again, I'm not thrilled with it. But I might as well see the kid in person. But I'm not sure how to do that without getting spotted or him just trying to turn me in. Plus, I also need to know what he looks like. And what to do with him for the day.'

"Oh, right. Well, I would say just hang out or get to know him a bit. As for how not to get spotted. Well, the kid will probably not rat you out instantly. He'll most likely be curious why you're even there. But he'll understand when you explain it to him. Although, until that happens, you should probably disguise yourself."

'Alright. But can you give me a bit more to work with? Remember, I have never been on a date before and barely hung out with friends aside from you and a few others.' Neo signed before sending him a warning glare that didn't faze Roman.

"Well, I can't give you much help in that regard since I've only been on one date in my life. And that was an arranged one. But from my limited experience, I would say just go to some places to talk or have a quick bite. You don't *have* to do anything intimate. Just spend some time with each other."

'Fine. Now, what does he look like?'

"Here's a picture of the kid I had one of the helpers take." Roman said as he slid the photo to Neo.

'Not bad on the eyes. A bit scrawny and dorky looking. But I have seen far, far worse.' Neo signed with a sigh before pocketing

the photo. ***'Anyway. I'm going to get this over with. See you later.'***

"See you, Neo." Roman said. And as soon as the door closed, he let out a sigh before getting ready to meet his new potential business client.

Two Hours Later

Vale

"Alright. I got the Aloe Vera, sunscreen, my medicine, and a few travel containers. Now I just need to find those charging port converters for our scrolls. But where can I find them?" Jaune asked as he looked around.

After arriving in Vale, Jaune immediately went to find all the supplies he needed before getting the things his friends would need. Thankfully, most of the things were relatively easy to find or get. The only item that gave him trouble was getting his motion sickness medicine. And that was only because of a mix-up with something else. Once Jaune got everything his friends needed, he went to grab the last of the items for his family. However, as he was making his way back to the bullheads, he realized he had forgotten the charging port converters. And, uniformly, despite checking six electronics stores, he failed to find any and was now getting tired.

"Where can I get one? I know I can get one online, but it will take a few days to get here, and we leave tomorrow. Hopefully, I can find some before it gets too late." Jaune said as he wandered around town. But he then heard his stomach growling, reminding him that he only had an apple today. Groaning but seeing no harm in it since he still had time, Jaune decided to get something light to eat. And after a few minutes, he stumbled upon a restaurant with outside seating. "Might as well."

With his mind made up, Jaune went to the restaurant and ordered a small grape soda, a cheeseburger with bacon, and extra Scotch

Bonnet peppers with a side of fries. And as the server took the menu inside and got his order ready, Jaune pondered all that happened these past few days. He still had trouble that his parents put him into an arranged marriage contract with eighteen girls, three of which were criminals. However, while Jaune still wasn't thrilled with it, as he wanted everything to go the usual way, he wasn't complaining either. After all, if it weren't for that, he wouldn't have realized his feeling for Pyrrha and Nora and be in a relationship with them.

But at the same time, Jaune still saw Coco and Velvet as friends. Well, more so Velvet than Coco, but still. And while most might not see it like this, but Jaune considered himself lucky that they could call each other friends. However, he was worried about his other future wives for multiple reasons. The first was that they might not be as friendly toward it, him, or his friends. The second was the reason behind the arranged contract. While Velvet's, Nora's, Pyrrha's, and, debatably, Coco's parents had good reasons, Jaune could not say for sure about the others. For all Jaune knew, it could be for political reasons like sealing ties between towns. And that would definitely cause problems for everyone.

Yet, what troubled Jaune's mind the most was Neo, the notorious criminal, and partner of Roman Torchwick. First off, how in Oum's name did a contract between them happen? And did it happen before she became a criminal, after, or during? Additionally, if what Coco said was true, then it made too little sense that Neo's parents would agree to an arranged contract. Moreover, wouldn't the contract be void since Neo's parents were dead? And if it wasn't, would Neo even know about or want to go with it? She didn't seem like the kind of person who wanted to settle down any time soon, especially with someone with him. However, Jaune couldn't be sure until he met her.

'The question is, how will I even meet her? Neo can create illusions and disguise herself as anyone. For all I know, I could have past her on my way here. But that is if she is willing to communicate. It might be a repeat of when Coco discovered the contract and Neo's on her way to kill me. I just hope that Oum is on my side, and that isn't the

case.' Jaune thought. But he was snapped out of his thoughts when the server returned.

"Here you go, sir." The employee said before leaving.

"I'll worry about Neo later. Right now, I need to get those charger converters, then head back to Beacon and finish getting ready. Hmm. Maybe I could take Pyrrha and Nora on another date while we're in my hometown. And I could also hang out some more with Velvet and Coco." Jaune said as he took a bite of his burger.

However, he felt someone tap his shoulder a second later. Swallowing, Jaune turned around and saw a faunus girl with gray eyes, vertically-slit pupils, and auburn hair. And like Blake, she had faunus ears. But unlike Blake, she had fox ears instead of cat ears. She was wearing a form-fitting V-neck black dress with a high collar and long sleeves. She was also wearing black heels.

"Yes? Can I help you?" Jaune asked as he cleaned his hands.

'Yes, you can.' The girl answered in sign language.

'Great. I KNEW I should have finished those courses. Maybe I can find an online class.' Jaune thought. "Sorry. But are you, by chance, mute?"

'Yes.'

'At least I know a few things in sign language.' Jaune thought while taking out his scroll, opening up an app, and handing it to her. "Here. I have a text-to-speak app for situations like this."

"Thanks." The scroll said what the girl typed in.

"So. Uh. Do you need something?"

"Yes."

"Uh. Okay. What is it?"

"It's simple. Can you show me around town?"

"Pardon." Jaune asked, surprised as he was not at all expecting that. "Can you run by that me again?"

"I'm from Vacuo. I was here visiting and admiring the sights. But the bus left without me. The tour is sending a bus to come and pick me up but much later. But in the meantime, I figured I'd ask one of the locals if they would be willing to show me around."

"Well. That's dangerous and a bit gamble, to be honest."

"It kind of is. But I know how to defend myself. A close friend of mine is a huntress. And I have my weapon on me."

"Okay. But why me?"

"You seemed nice. Well, a lot nice than others I have met, especially those huntsmen-in-training I came across earlier."

"Well, thanks for the compliment. But yeah, some huntsmen-in-training are not that nice." Jaune said, remembering Team Crdl and some other teams he had the unfortunate experience of being bullied by. "But not all of them are bad. But sure. I'll show you around. But only for a few hours since I have to head back to Beacon later."

"A few hours is fine since that's probably when I need to head to where the bus is picking me up."

"Alright. Let me just pay for my food, and we'll get started." Jaune said as he got up and entered the restaurant.

'Okay. Not a bad first impression. He seems nice. Although, he was a bit idiotic for leaving his scroll with me. Maybe he's a bit too trusting or sees the good in people instead of for who they really are. But looks can be deceiving, and I should know. Let's see how the

rest of this... day goes before I decide anything.' Neo thought as Jaune returned a moment later.

"Alright. Are you ready to go?" Jaune asked.

"Yes." Neo answered.

"So, where would you like to go?"

"Uh. You tell me. Remember, I'm not from here."

"Yeah, that's my bad. I should have phrased that better. I mean, do you have any places in mind that you would like to see/visit first? Like, do you want to see the piers, the landmarks, some must-see spots that aren't tourist traps, the entertainment district, or something else like that?"

"Oh. That's what you meant. Then, I would say, take me to the landmarks first."

"Okay. I know a few that are great. Follow me." Jaune said.

Ten Minutes Later

"Wow. Who's that?" Neo 'asked' as they arrived in front of a statue. In truth, she knew who they were looking at but had to pretend not to know to keep up the ruse. And to keep Jaune's mind off the fact that she forgot to get a camera to help with the lie.

"That's the Great King's assistant. Everyone talks about the Great King, but not enough people give credit to his assistant. Although, part of the reason is that no one knows her name. Honestly, all anybody knows is that she played a major part in helping the Great King end the war. But aside from that, nobody knows anything else about her." Jaune answered.

"Then, how do you know she existed?"

"There are surviving reports detailing her existence and how she helped the Great King. But they only tell of her during the war, not before or after."

"Ah. Maybe that might change down the line. But I have to say, they did a great job with her statue and how beautifully they decorated it. Although, they could have gone a lot less heavy with the flowers. Thank Oum, I don't have pollen allergies." Neo said. While she didn't think much of the statute, Neo had to admit it looked nice, albeit a bit too decorated for her taste. However, she was being truthful when she said that there were too many flowers. She counted at least thirty different kinds of flowers just in front of the statue. And who knows how many more were in the back.

"Yeah. There are too many flowers. But the people who built the statue didn't bring them. The people visiting planted them."

"That makes more sense." Neo said, not really caring. **"But is there a statue of the Great King?"**

"Yes. But it's on the other side of town, and nobody is allowed near it."

"Why?"

"The statue was in need of repairs and maintenance after a recent 'prank' from some visitors. So, they're now fixing it."

"Ah. Do you know who did it?"

"Nope. No one does. But most don't think it was a targeted attack. They think the visitors were just drunk since the damages were minor."

"Well, people do stupid things when they're drunk."

"Yeah." Jaune agreed in a tone that surprised Neo. But before she could say anything, Jaune cleared his throat. "Anyway. Should we

move on to the next landmark?"

"Let's see another, and then we do something else."

"Alright. But before we do the one I have in mind, I have to ask. Are you afraid of heights?"

"No. Well, technically, yes. As long as it's evident that we won't fall, then I'm fine with heights. Why?"

"Just checking because the next landmark I have in mind is a bit high up." Jaune explained before motioning Neo to follow him.

Fifteen Minutes Later

"Okay. This is an amazing sight." Neo said, awed, as they stood on a cliff that was taller than the cliff that overlooked the Emerald Forest. But unlike the one that only overlooked the forest, this cliff allowed her to see the whole town, parts of nearby villages, and the nearby ocean. However, what confused Neo was how few people were there. "Why are there so few people here?"

"Heights. I'm not that big of a fan of heights. In fact, I'm almost terrified of them. And a lot of people feel the same way." Jaune answered as he tightened his grip on the railings. "Plus, the gondola lifts are the only way to get up here. And they can give people motion sickness."

"Really?"

"Yeah."

"You know, if that's the case, you could have brought me someplace else to see a different landmark."

"I know. But I wanted you to have the full experience since most tours don't include this place. And if it means having to deal with some weak knees, then so be it."

"Well, that's sweet. But also, do you have motion sickness?"

"Yup."

"And don't they make pills for that?"

"Yup. But I forgot to take them, even though I have them in the bag I'm holding." Jaune said after swallowing a lump in his throat and lifting the bag.

"Okay. That is funny. But that is also on you for forgetting." Neo said, smirking while mentally laughing.

"My sisters tell me that all the time when this happens."

"I can see that happening. Anyway. We can head to the next spot now."

"Okay. You want to see another landmark or something else?"

"How about one of those non-tourist trap locations?"

"Alright. This next one is a bit far, but it's usually worth it."

"Alright. I trust you." Neo said as she followed Jaune. *'At least, for now.'*

Smiling, Jaune got into the gondola lift with Neo following suit. And as they waited for it to take them back down, Jaune wondered exactly who the girl was as she reminded him of someone else. But he could not put his finger on it. Meanwhile, Neo was slightly impressed with Jauen so far. Despite it being short notice, he was putting in far more effort than she expected. And even though the statue wasn't something she cared for, the view was amazing and something she didn't know about. Although, Neo did admire how Jaune put up with his fear of heights and motion sickness for her, which was something not many people would do.

'Still. Let's see just how the rest plays out.' Neo thought as she admired the sight.

After about ten minutes, they reached the ground and got off. They then got on a bus that would take them back to town. Thankfully, it didn't take long as there weren't too many people driving. And Jaune was thankful for this as he still had to pack up for the trip tomorrow.

"So. Where are you taking me?" Neo asked once they arrived and got off the bus.

"Not a specific place. But there is a spot here that I want to show you in case you ever decide to visit again."

"I'm not sure if I might come back." Neo lied, as she technically lived here. **"But what's the place?"**

"Most of the spots here are tourist traps that charge you a ridiculous amount of lien for simple knick-knacks. Here, you can find a lot more for a reasonable amount of lien, and often at a discount."

"Oh. Okay. Thanks for saving me from those rip-off merchandise. I might not come back again, but if I do, at least now I know where to go not to get scammed." Neo said. **"And yeah. Those places have ridiculous prices."**

Chuckling, Jaune showed a disguised Neo around the place. Yet, he was still unaware that it was Neo, one of his future wives. However, that did stop him from showing the mysterious girl around the place. And while she wouldn't admit it 'out loud,' Neo did like how Jaune kept her mind. It did reinforce what Roman told her about Jaune and how he put others before him most of the time. But she did make a mental note to come here again when she had a bit more lien on hand. And that also made her skillfully deflect some questions/offers from Jaune to keep up her ruse. But while the place did seem to have nothing interesting at first, Neo spotted a few things she might buy another day.

"Here. I brought you this." Jaune said, snapping Neo from her thoughts. Turning to him, Neo saw that Jaune had brought a nice pink and brown hoodie. And when she raised an eyebrow, Jaune explained. "I saw you shivering while we were on the cliff. And I heard it was supposed to get colder later. So I got you this so you don't get cold."

"Thanks." Neo said as she put on the hoodie and enjoyed the warmth it gave her. Despite being in Vale for most of her life and being used to the cold, Neo preferred the warm weather.

"No problem." Jaune said, smiling. "Anyway. I have to go soon. But I have enough time to take you to one last place. Where do you want to go?"

"Yeah. It's almost time for me too. Hmm. How about we head to the pier?"

"Alright."

Half an Hour Later

"Okay. We're here." Jaune said as they arrived at the pier.

"Huh. It's smaller than I expected." Neo said as she looked around. But, in reality, Neo was confused as this was not the pier she was expecting. She honestly expected Jaune to take her to the one near Beacon.

"That's because this is one of the less popular piers. The others are packed now due to the fairs."

"Fair. So, what's there to do here?"

"Well, there are a few things. But one thing this pier is known for is the fireworks that happen a bit after sunset."

"Really?" Neo asked, surprised as this was the first time she heard about that.

"Yup."

"Aren't fireworks illegal in Vale?"

"They technically are. But the people who do it are certified pyrotechnicians. So, there is little chance of something burning down. And because everyone likes it, the police and huntsmen don't do anything about it." Jaune said as three people in what appeared to be some kind of hazmat suit walked by.

"Are those the guys?"

"Yeah. No one knows who they are, but then again, they never take off their suits and never respond to anything."

"So, the silent types?"

"I want to say yes, but I'm not sure." Jaune said. And not a second later, the first firework exploded in the sky. "Hey, it's beginning."

"That was quick." Neo said, surprised.

"Well, I'm pretty sure they were just putting things away before they started."

"Maybe." Neo shrugged as they watched the show.

Twenty Minutes Later

"Well. That was nice. But I have to go now." Jaune said.

"Same. But now I have to head to the bus." Neo said as they left the place.

"Well, I hope you had a good time."

"It was fun, even though we didn't see that many places."

"Unfortunately. But if you ever decide to visit Vale again and we see each other, I'll be more than glad to show you around some more."

"Thanks."

"You know. I just realized something." Jaune said, chuckling.

"And what's that?" Neo asked, raising an eyebrow.

"I spent a good part of the day showing you around, and we don't even know each other's names."

'Oh, I know your name.' Neo thought before gaining a smirk. *'I might as well tell you my name. A little shock for you and to see if Roman was right.'*

"HEY! What are you doing?" Jaune asked, surprised as Neo dragged him into an alleyway.

"Oh. You'll see." Neo said. And before he could say anything, Jaune became shocked when the girl 'shattered' to reveal a smirking Neo.

"NEO!" Jaune asked, surprised.

"Yes." Neo said and smiled as Jaune started stuttering.

"I-I. Ah. Uh. I-I." Jaune stuttered, unsure of what to say. But after a moment, he remembered the contracts. "Uh. Well, since you're here-
"

"I know." Neo said before showing him the contract.

"So, uh. Are you going to kill me?" Jaune nervously asked. Neo smirked before shaking her head. And she internally chuckled when she saw him visibly relax.

"No. I won't kill you for this since you had no involvement with it. But that doesn't mean you're out of the woods yet. So, keep

that in mind. Until we meet again for our next date. Oh, and your friends have been texting you nonstop." Neo said before tossing Jaune his scroll. And before he could say anything, Neo 'vanished.' But while she was probably still around, Jaune knew it would be fruitless to try and find her.

"Well. At least she knows and won't kill me for it. But did she actually consider this a date or a test like Coco did with me? And is she actually going to try for another date/test? Best not to think about it right now. I'm tired, and there are too many questions and not enough answers." Jaune said as he checked his scroll. And his face went pale when he realized that he had over twenty calls from his friends and teammates. He immediately put away his scroll and ran for the bullheads. "I'm so dead."

Meanwhile

Hideout

"Oh, Neo. You're back already?" Roman asked as Neo entered the room. Currently, he is resting in the living room while reading a newspaper.

'Yup.' Neo signed as she went to the fridge to grab her ice cream.

"How was your date with the kid?"

'It wasn't a date. I did tell him that to try and get him to be embarrassed. But he didn't so much as blush.'

"Did he get scared?"

'Yup. But only for a little bit.'

"I don't blame him. So you didn't consider this a date."

'Nope.'

"Oh, well. It's not like it has to be a date. You only need to be somewhat decent friends for the marriage not to be awkward."

'True. And honestly, right now, he seems and acts like a big brother. But that doesn't surprise me since he said he has sisters.'

'I know some people want big families, but eight children is too much. Unfortunately, I'm pretty sure this kid is going to have a minimum of thirty-six. And if he has his father's genes, then that number might triple.' Roman thought while taking a sip of his drink. "So, you want me to nullify the contract?"

'Not yet?'

"Not yet?" Roman asked, surprised.

'Yeah. Not yet. I still don't think this marriage contract thing is the route I'll take. And I doubt that will change in the future. But after another date or so, you can tear it up. I just want to see where this goes for now.'

"Alright." Roman said. *'Just be quick, Neo. Your wedding is on the tenth of this coming February. And you know how fast time can fly.'*

'If you need me, I'll be in my room.'

"Okay."

'Oh. And before I forget. I have to ask.'

"Ask what?" Roman asked.

'How did Junior even come across the contract? I doubt he would look for something like that out of boredom. And he knows to keep out of our business for his own good.'

"I'm not sure. As soon as I meet Junior again, I'll ask him." Roman said, now wondering the same thing. *'Could it be because the twins*

or some secret daughter Junior has is also marrying the kid? I doubt it. But then again, I know he's marrying eight girls. But I don't know any of their names yet aside from Neo's.'

'Good. Night.' Neo signed before heading to her room.

"I never thought this would happen. But I better call Junior. The last thing I need is for Neo to be mad at me. But I do hope she chooses the arranged contract option."

Notes:

A bit of a delay since I had to rewrite this twice.

TO CLARIFY, Jaune didn't know it was Neo until the end and she did not consider it a date.

Essiter1987: Yeah, the 'Outing' title was from Jaune's perspective as he didn't know what to call it. Most titles will be from his perspective. Yes, Coco and Velvet will have actual dates with Jaune later on. As for the cliché of someone from Team Rwby following them, probably not as their chapters will begin after the next one. For Ruby, they will be close friends with Ruby maybe crushing on him. (But I'm not sure yet.)

Blazingshade3: Yes, there will be more moments with Coco and Velvet, along with all the girls in future chapters. None of them will get demoted to side characters as I will try to make them prevalent in later chapters without them feeling forced in. That said, I can't guarantee that some won't appear for a few chapters after their initial meeting/date with Jaune as there are eighteen girls he's marrying.

Guest: Sorry for not answering this in the previous chapters as I forgot about it. But while Glynda will appear in the story, she won't be one of the people Jaune's marrying. I tried coming up with ideas for her being one of them but they were too farfetched and barely believable.

Lastly, for Winter and Weiss. While I have most others figured out, I need a little help for the Schnee sisters, specifically Winter. While Weiss might feel outraged or neutral at the marriage, who should Winter react? Should she be relieved that she's marrying someone far better, respectable, and more moral than the ones Jaques chose? Should she be skeptical of the whole thing (As in feeling like something is not right about this or that it is a set up)? Or should she look forward to meeting Jaune in some way (Ex: Winter became curious and intrigued about Arc from the stories Weiss told her about her time at Beacon and possibly becomes infatuated with him)? Or some other way?

Chapter 9

WAIT, WHAT! HOW MANY I'M MARRYING!?

Chapter 9

Chap 9: Real or a Hallucination?

Beacon

"JAUNE!" Pyrrha and Nora shouted, relieved to see their leader back in one piece as he entered the dorm.

"Hey, you two." Jaune said, chuckling as his girlfriends hugged him. But he couldn't deny that it felt great hugging them.

"Are you okay?" Nora asked.

"What happened? Why didn't you answer any of our calls or texts?" Pyrrha asked as they separated.

"Something came up. Something I'm honestly not sure if I should have expected to happen."

"And what's that, Jaune?" Ren asked, curious.

"Well." Jaune said as he sat on his bed. "I met Neo while I was out."

"Wait. You met Neo? How?" Nora asked, shocked.

"I was grabbing a bite while thinking of where I could find a charging port converter since I couldn't find one. Then I met this girl, which was a disguised Neo, that said she was from Vacuo and was visiting Vale. She then asked me to show her around for a while."

"You didn't find that odd?" Pyrrha asked, raising an eyebrow.

"I did. But she then told me that she essentially got left behind by her tour, and they were sending a bus to pick her up, but it wouldn't arrive for a few hours. I still found it odd, but I agreed to show her around."

"You still could have texted us, though." Nora said.

"I would have. But that slipped my mind when the girl used sign language. I gave her my scroll so she could use a text-to-speech app so we could communicate. And then I showed her around town and some places that aren't tourist traps."

"When did you realize it was Neo?" Ren asked.

"I didn't."

"Then how do you know it was her?"

"She pulled me to the side in an alleyway and dropped her disguise."

"What did she say or do?" Pyrrha asked, curious and worried.

"I was about to ask/tell her about the contract but stopped when she showed me her copy. Then I asked if she was going to kill me, but she said no because I had no involvement in it."

"That's good." Nora and Pyrrha said, relieved.

"But she also said that I wasn't out of the woods yet. And that I should be ready for our next date."

"So, she wants the marriage to happen?" Ren asked, raising an eyebrow.

"I'm not sure. I think, like Coco, she wanted to test me for something. But I don't know what."

"Hopefully, it is like Coco, and Neo just wants to test you before getting to know you better. So, when the marriage comes around, it

won't be as awkward." Pyrrha said.

"Hopefully."

"I wonder if Roman knows about this." Nora said.

"Possibly. Maybe he was the one who told her." Pyrrha said.

"Roman is close to Neo, after all. So that would make sense if he told her." Ren added.

"Maybe. Either way, all we can do now is guess since we don't know anything else." Jaune said with a sigh.

"Maybe you can ask Neo whenever she comes around for the next date." Ren suggested.

"I'll try to keep that in mind considering our next date will probably be a surprise one like today since I don't have a way to contact her." Jaune said, unaware of what Neo did to his scroll. He then let out a yawn before stretching. "Anyway. It's getting late, and we need to head to bed now if we don't want to be tired tomorrow morning. Plus, I still need to finish packing."

"Right." The others said before helping Jaune so everyone could get to sleep faster. And like the previous nights, Nora and Pyrrha snuggled into Jaune on his bed.

Meanwhile

Unknown Location

"Alright. That was a long day and way too close." Mercury said as he and Emerald returned to their temporary 'living conditions.'

And by living conditions, they mean an abandoned bunker that was built during the Great War. After the war ended, the council and leaders maintained the bunkers for years and only recently stopped. And while far from ideal or comfortable, Mercury and Emerald were

glad they still had lights, heat, water, and plumbing. Food, medicine, and a few other things were the only items that were missing. That was why they were constantly scavenging and stealing from the town. But despite this, it was certainly far better than most other places they had stayed at before.

But while there were problems with the town, such as limited resources, Mercury and Emerald liked it. The townspeople were relatively friendly and didn't ask too many questions. However, a recent discovery led to Mercury and Emerald scrambling to find a new place in time before winter came. They learned that the council would be sending demolition teams to tear down all bunkers built during the Great War, including theirs.

"Yeah. But at least we have enough food and drinks for the next week so we can focus on finding a new home." Emerald said as she closed the door and locked it.

"True. And it will give us time to check out another town. These last two were a bust, and I still doubt the townsfolk would let us move in with them."

"Unfortunately. But we can't blame them." Emerald said while fidgeting. She then sighed before turning to Mercury. "Mercury."

"Yes."

"You know we only have one REAL option available."

"I know. I just don't like coastal towns." Mercury groaned.

"I know you don't. But we've burned too many bridges while working with *her.* And most of them happened to be the leaders of the towns we visited. So, I doubt they would take us in. There are only a few towns that won't arrest us on the spot. And even fewer where we can live somewhat comfortably."

"You're right. I still don't like it, but you're right, Emerald." Mercury said with a sigh. "We should expand our search. And we should do so now before winter arrives, as I know we both hate the cold. So, do you have any towns in mind?"

"Well. There's this one town I have been visiting any time I get the chance."

"Really? For what?" Mercury asked, curious.

"To see what they have to offer and to swipe some things this town doesn't have."

"Oh. Thanks for that. So, how is it? Do you think we should move there?"

"It's nice and has pleasant weather. And it doesn't get as cold as it does here in the winter. Still cold, just not as much. But I wouldn't say we move there just yet. I want to check it out a bit more."

"Alright. Do you want me to come?"

"Typically, I would say yes. But I think it would be best if you start packing up everything. So when I return, if it's good, we can leave immediately."

"Are you sure?"

"Yes. With both of us there, it might be faster, but there is a higher chance someone might recognize us. But if only one of us went, the chances of that happening would be a lot less. Plus, I can use my semblance to escape in case things go south."

"Fair point. Just be careful." Mercury asked. While he might not have liked Emerald that much initially, he grew to see her as a friend and eventually like a sister. "When are you leaving?"

"In a few hours."

"Tonight? Why? We just had a long day. We should rest a bit more."

"I know. But it's a long trip, even by bullhead. And besides, the quicker we do this, the more time we will have remaining if this town doesn't work out." Emerald half-lied.

"Good point." Mercury said before yawning. "Anyway. I'm heading to bed now. You should rest at least a bit before leaving."

"Right. I'll take a quick nap before leaving. Good night."

"Good night, Em." Mercury said before heading toward his 'room.'

Nodding, Emerald watched him leave before heading to her 'room.' And calling it a room was a bit too generous if she was being honest. It was only marginally bigger than a standard supply closest. Inside was a sleeping bag, a bag of her clothes, some emergency food and supplies, and a few other things she felt like 'burrowing.' Again, like the bunker, it wasn't much, but it was still better than being outside in the cold or in some other places she had to use in the past.

Sighing, Emerald went to the bag, moved it to the side, and removed the fake brick she used to conceal a hole in the wall. Reaching inside, Emerald pulled out a medium size chest. Picking it up, she went to her sleep bag and sat down before opening it. And inside the box were various mementos of the only things that ever brought her joy. Some were from the few people she could call friends or the ones that genuinely cared for her. And some represented distant memories of the few times she felt free.

However, the ones that meant the most to Emerald were the ones at the bottom. Moving the rest to the side, Emerald smiled at the few reminders of her parents. She might not remember them that well, but she did have a few good memories of them, along with some bad ones. But that just made good ones better. And while Emerald would like to reminisce, she knew she didn't have time right now. Moving them to the side, she pulled out a worn-looking letter. While it didn't

seem significant at first glance, it was what was inside that was important.

"I still can't believe they saw this far into the future and did this." Emerald said as she opened the letter and pulled out what was inside. And inside was an arranged marriage contract and an explanation from her parents.

After escaping from *that lady* , Mercury and Emerald searched for a place to lay low until they were in the clear. But they knew they needed to leave Vacuo if they wanted to be safe. So Mercury called in a favor from someone he met a while ago. Thankfully, she came through and sent them fake papers they could use to head to Vale in an unmarked plane. But when Emerald went to the post office to pick it up, she discovered there was an old letter for her that was surprisingly from her parents.

With her curiosity piqued, Emerald snatched the letter when the employee wasn't looking. However, she couldn't open it until she and Mercury were in Vale. And once she did, she was shocked beyond belief to find that it was a genuine arranged marriage contract for her and somebody named Jaune Arc. Thankfully, there was a letter from her parents that explained everything. Apparently, they knew their time was coming to an end, and immense hardships would undoubtedly follow Emerald. And while they were unsure how long it would last or if she could escape it, they wanted a backup to ensure Emerald would eventually get a good life where she was loved and treated like family. So, they made an arranged contract with one of the few friends they trusted.

However, they put in a term that allowed Emerald to nullify it if she wanted to. And initially, she did. But then the shock waned and allowed Emerald to clearly remember her situation. While unorthodox, she knew it could be her way of getting out of her current situation. Not just that, but it would allow her to escape her past, move forward, and not have to worry about so many things. She would no longer have to worry about finding somewhere to have a roof over her head or scavenging for food. But then Emerald

remembered Mercury. She couldn't just abandon him. While Emerald might have initially protested against Mercury's recruitment, she eventually grew to see him as a sort of brother. But an opportunity like this wouldn't come around again. So, she had to think carefully about her next move.

And after a few days of settling down, Emerald decided to go through with it. It would still be a bit of a long shot, but she hoped it would work out. However, if there was one thing Emerald didn't want was an elaborate or massive wedding. She wanted something small and quick but something she felt comfortable with. However, due to not having a lot of lien on hand, Emerald had gone to the town a few times to steal the things to prepare for the wedding. She wasn't lying when she told Mercury she had been there a few times. It was just primarily for a different reason. Plus, while she had a feeling the other family would help with the ceremony, Emerald saw no harm in getting ready early since the date would be the fifteenth of February.

'I just hope the kid is alright and isn't anything like those Shade or Atlas students we met a while back.' Emerald said as she put the contract back in the envelope before pocketing it. She then got up, put the chest in her bag of clothes, and started to get ready for the trip. *'But maybe I should tell Mercury I would be gone for a few days to get a few more supplies. And I could use that extra time to get to know the kid. It would make things less awkward.'*

Next Day

Morning

"Alright. Is everyone ready?" Jaune asked as he, Coco, Velvet, and the rest of his team stood in front of the bullhead.

"Yes. We got everything." Velvet yawned as she grabbed Jaune's arm and laid her head on it.

"Did you take your motion sickness pills, Jaune?" Pyrrha asked while taking some coffee that Coco had made for everyone so they could

wake up. They might be huntsmen-in-training, but that doesn't mean they are morning people or early risers.

"Yes. I did." Jaune answered.

"So, how long was it until we reached your hometown, Jaune?" Ren asked as he drank some tea as he wasn't a fan of coffee.

"About five hours."

"Oh, so we can catch up on some sleep." Nora said as she drank some tea. The last thing anybody needed was a hyperactive Nora.

"And it will let me plan out a few things." Coco added as she made a list of things to ask Jaune's family. But also a list of things she can do with Arc. While she still needed to get to know Jaune better, she felt like they could start going on actual dates soon.

"And we can find out a bit more of who else you're marrying, Jaune." Pyrrha said.

"Good idea, Pyr. We should ask them so we can be prepared." Jaune said.

"And how in Oum's name they managed to get you in an arranged marriage contract with three criminals." Ren said.

"Yeah. But from now on, let's not call them criminals." Jaune said, uncomfortable with calling his future wives criminals. While it might be true, it did not sit well with him anymore.

"Alright."

"Okay. The pilots just said the bullhead is ready. Let's get on." Pyrrha said.

Nodding, everyone boarded the bullhead and took their seats. And as one might expect, Nora and Pyrrha sat next to Jaune. However, to Jaune's surprise and slight embarrassment, Velvet brazenly sat on

his lap and lay against his chest. Blushing, Jaune fixed himself while Nora and Pyrrha giggled before laying their heads on his shoulders to take a small nap. Figuring he should do the same, Jaune breathed out before closing his eyes and letting sleep take him.

Five Hours Later

Jaune's Hometown

"Alright, everyone. We have arrived and will be landing momentarily. It is a nice 28 degrees Celsius. But rain is expected later today, so be sure to keep some jackets and umbrellas handy." The pilot announced over the comms, waking everyone up.

"That was fast." Velvet said, yawning.

"Not really. It only felt fast because you were asleep on your future husband's lap." Coco said with a smirk.

"Oh." Velvet said, blushing but not making a move to get off.

"How far is your parent's home, Jaune?" Nora asked as she and Pyrrha got ready. And with a grumble, Velvet also got up and started collecting her things.

"About twenty minutes. Our home is on the other side of town." Jaune answered.

"Then why did we land here? Isn't there an airport closer to your home?" Coco asked, curious.

"There are two close to my home. But one is down for repairs, and the other is not for public transport."

"Are we walking then?" Ren asked.

"No. My sister Dahlia is coming to pick us up in her van." Jaune answered as he grabbed his bags. "And she should be here any

moment."

"I can't wait to meet your family, Jaune." Velvet said, blushing. But despite looking forward to it, she was also slightly nervous.

"Are we going to meet your entire family, Jaune?" Pyrrha asked.

"Unfortunately, not. Amber is too caught up in her work, and Midori couldn't get any time off from medical school."

"Time off? Don't you mean break?" Coco asked, curious.

"Technically, she's on break, yes. But her teachers gave her lots of tests and projects disguised as homework. And they are worth a good chunk of her grade. So, she had to stay behind and finish them."

"That sucks." Nora said.

"It does." Jaune said with a shrug. But it honestly didn't surprise him as he knew how passionate Amber was about her job. Feeling his scroll vibrate, Jaune pulled it out and saw that he received a text from Dahlia. "Anyway. Dahlia is here. Let's go."

Nodding, everyone picked up their bags and disembarked from the bullhead. They then headed to the street and looked around a bit before seeing an older lady with blonde hair wearing thick glasses waving them over. Smiling, Jaune ran to the lady and hugged her.

"Hey, Dahlia. It's good to see you." Jaune said, smiling, as Dahlia adjusted her glasses and sweatpants.

"Good to see you, Jaune." Dahlia said, ruffling her brother's hair as his friends arrived. "And I take it these are your friends."

"Yup. This is Pyrrha, Ren, Nora, Coco, and Velvet."

"Nice to meet you." They said.

"Same. And I take it that you know you're marrying your female friends, right?" Dahlia asked. Instead of answering, Pyrrha, Velvet, and Nora hugged Jaune while Coco smirked and nodded.

"Yeah. Although, Mom and Dad could have told me a while ago." Jaune said.

"Yeah. But we can't blame them too much. They did clean themselves up after all, for our sake." Dahlia said.

"What do you mean?" Velvet asked, curious.

"It's slightly personal. But to give you a brief context of what happened. Our parents used to like to have a drink every now and then. But they stopped when they noticed the rift between them and us."

"Oh."

"Yeah. It wasn't the best. But after that, everything got way better."

"Anyway. Are the others here?" Jaune asked, hoping to move the conversation as it was still a sensitive topic for him.

"Almost. Clementine is still coming. But she should be here in about an hour."

"That's good."

"Anyway. Let's get going. I'm sure you all could use a good meal." Dahlia said before getting into her van with the others following suit. However, Dahlia smiled when she saw Pyrrha, Nora, and Velvet sitting with Jaune. *'Oh, Saphron is so going to tease him when she hears about the bunny faunus sitting on his lap.'*

"So, Dahlia." Pyrrha said as Dahlia started the van and drove toward the Arc residence.

"Yes?" Dahlia asked, looking in the reive view mirror.

"How long have you known about the contracts?"

"Not long. In fact, I only learned about them earlier this month."

"Really?" Ren asked.

"Yup. And not how you might expect."

"So your parents didn't tell you your brother was marrying eighteen girls?" Coco asked, surprised.

"Well, they planned to. But it's a bit hard to communicate with each other since my job takes me all over Remnant."

"If I remember correctly. Jauney said that you're a Cultural Anthropologist." Nora said.

"That's right. I might not look like it now, but that's because I take full advantage of my vacation days to relax as much as possible."

"I've heard of Anthropology. But what's a Cultural Anthropologist?" Velvet asked, curious.

"Well, Anthropology is the study of human and Faunus societies and cultures and their development. Cultural Anthropology is a sub-field of that. Basically, we take a deeper look into the cultural variation among humans and faunus. But that can often mean we have to immerse ourselves deeply into a culture to better understand that."

"What do you mean?" Pyrrha asked, confused.

"Dahlia sometimes has to... become a part of their culture. And I really mean become a part of it. In other words, she has to become... a part of the family." Jaune explained.

"Oh. I get it now."

"But isn't that kind of dangerous?" Ren asked.

"Oh, yes. Just about every field of Anthropology is dangerous. And it can come from anywhere. Heck, there's a field where Anthropologists study about dust and its impact on society. And it might not seem dangerous until you learn that some researchers are sent to places with highly volatile dust veins to study how societies can form around them and prosper."

"Neat. But if that's the case, how did you learn about the arranged marriages?" Nora asked, curious.

"Oh. I was in Vacuo earlier this month studying how and why some tribes created a sort-of overarching government they use when something comes up that involves the entirety of multiple tribes. But while I was taking a break, I met this couple for lunch. And after a bit of talking, we somehow came up on the topic of siblings. They told me about their daughter while I talked about Jaune and the others. One thing led to another, and I learned that they made the contract to have their daughter marry Jaune. And then they told me how seventeen others were doing the same."

"Wow. Do you know what's the daughter's name?" Jaune asked, curious.

"May Zedong."

"Do you know why May's parents made the contract since we learned everyone's parents did it for a reason?" Coco asked.

"Yeah. They know how shy and reserved their daughter is. So, they wanted to help her in her love life, which I don't agree with at all. But they also wanted to choose someone that wouldn't overwhelm her and be able to pull her out of her shell. They wondered for a good while who would be a good candidate. But when they heard that their best friends had a son, which is Jaune here, they came rushing over to see for themselves how he was. And after seeing that Jaune was basically the spitting image of the good parts of Mom and Dad minus the chaotic parts, they made the contract.

"Really?" Velvet asked, surprised.

"Yup."

"I feel like there is more to it." Coco said.

"It would seem like it, but there isn't. Zedong's parents were just so taken aback and happy with how Jaune was turning out that they felt like they made the right choice. Although, they did keep in contact with Mom and Dad to see if Jaune remained the same or if he had changed. But since he only got better, Zedong's parents now firmly believe they'd made the right choice." Dahlia said as she pulled into the driveway of the Arc House. "Okay. We're here."

"Wow. That was quick." Ren said.

"That's because there was not much traffic. Sheliak has a lot of public transportation, so not a lot of people have cars. Plus, a lot of things like supermarkets are within walking distance." Jaune explained. "Also, most are either still at work or at home resting from school."

"True." The others said as they exited the van. And they were shocked to see a wide, three-story log cabin home.

"Yeah. It's big. But it's very cozy." Dahlia said.

"How did your family afford this, Arc?" Coco asked.

"Oh, we didn't buy it. Our great-grandparents built it and passed it down to us. But we did expand it a bit and made some upgrades thanks to the money mom makes being the town's accountant." Jaune explained as they reached the door and opened it. "WE'RE HOME!"

"AND WE BROUGHT SPECIAL GUESTS!" Dahlia shouted as she closed the door after everyone entered.

"JAUNE!" A high-pitched voice shouted. Jaune and Dahlia smiled when their nephew came 'running' around a corner and headed toward them.

"Hey, Adrian. How's our nephew?" Jaune asked, picking Adrian up. And, like always, he had to lean his head back when Adrian started trying to pull his hair.

"JAUNE!" Adrian shouted, trying his best to grab Jaune's hair.

"Aw. He's so cute." Nora, Pyrrha, and Velvet said.

"And he's getting quite big. How old is he?" Coco asked.

"He's five." Another voice answered.

"Hey, Saph. Hey, Terra." Jaune said, handing Adrian to Dahlia as he knew what was coming. And as he expected, Saphron, with blinding speed, pulled Jaune into a headlock.

"Hey, bro." Saphron said, rubbing her fist on his head.

"Is that normal?" Nora asked, curious.

"Only child?" Dahlia asked.

"Yup."

"Then yes. This is quite normal between siblings. But this is also just how Saphron and Jaune act with each other. They were always the closest in this family." Terra answered as she took Adrian.

"That's an understatement." Dahlia said.

"But this is how we always greet each other." Jaune said as he barely managed to escape Saphron's headlock.

"Yup. Anyway. I take it they are your friends and teammates." Saphron said.

"And the girls being your future wives?" Terra asked.

"Yup." Jaune answered.

"Wait. How did you know that?" Pyrrha asked.

"Mom and Dad told me." Saphron answered.

"And I know because while my wife may not be a gossip queen, she *DOES* love to tease her brother to no end. And I overheard her make ways how to tease him about his future eighteen wives." Terra explained.

"Speaking of which. Have you met all of them?" Saphron asked.

"Nope. There are still a few I don't know." Jaune answered.

"But also speaking of not knowing. Did any of you know that your brother is marrying three criminals?" Coco asked, lowering her shades and raising her eyebrow.

"Please don't call them criminals, Coco. I know it's true, but still."

"Well?" Coco asked, ignoring Jaune.

"Nope. This is the first time I heard that." Dahlia said, with Terra nodding.

"Jaune told me he was marrying two criminals and a mystery one. But where did the third one come from?" Saphron asked.

"The mystery one is Neo, the partner of Roman Torchwick. And I believe the other two are bouncers working at a place called Junior's Bar. And they are also part of a crime syndicate, I believe, but I'm not sure." Jaune answered.

"Well, add that to the list of questions we have for them." Another voice answered. Turning to where it came from, everyone saw the rest of Jaune's sisters coming toward them.

"Hey, Clementine. Hey, Primrose and Poppy." Jaune said, smiling.

"Hey, Jaune. Hey, Dahlia." They all said simultaneously.

"How are you three doing?" Dahlia asked.

"We're doing pretty good." Primrose and Poppy simultaneously said.

"Okay. Was it just me, or was that kind of creepy?" Pyrrha asked.

"No. It was." Velvet said.

"What about you, Clem?" Saphron asked.

"Tiring because Mrs. Steiner kept on giving us homework. EVEN WHEN WE HAVE BREAK!" Clementine pouted, causing everyone to chuckle.

"Don't complain, Clem. It's only one assignment." Another voice said. And Ren, Pyrrha, Nora, Velvet, and Coco felt the air thicken when supposedly Jaune's parents came into the room.

"Hey, Mom. Hey, Dad." The Arc children said.

"Hey, kids." Jett said, smiling. But it was a tense smile.

"It's nice to see all my kids together in one room again." Aurelia said, happy, before turning to the others. "I take it these are your friends, Jaune."

"And future wives." Jaune added.

"I take it you all want to talk about it now, right?" Jett asked.

"Yes. Let's get it out of the way since we're all here." Jaune said, with the others agreeing.

"Alright. Let me make some refreshments for all of us since you're probably tired from the trip." Aurelia said before heading into the

kitchen.

"Is it always like this, Jaune?" Ren asked.

"No. It's usually a lot better. Aside from a rough patch years ago, we always had a great relationship. It's just this whole marriage contract thing. We need to get it out of the open and discuss it. And once we do, we can all enjoy this vacation a bit more. It's just. It put a bit of a strain on our relationship." Jaune answered.

"Alright."

Meanwhile

"Finally." Emerald said, annoyed, as she disembarked the bullhead.

While a flight from the town Emerald currently resided in to here typically took about two hours, the trip lasted about nine hours. And that was because she had to make many transfers due to *SOMETHING* going wrong with the bullheads. The first had insufficient fuel. The second one needed emergency maintenance. And the third bullhead somehow caught on fire. Thankfully, they didn't force her to pay for the additional trips and even gave her a refund, which Emerald was grateful for as she didn't have too much lien, to begin with.

"Alright. So, the kid I'm supposed to marry is Jaune Arc. And from the letter, it says his parents still live in this town. But they wrote it years ago, so that might have changed. I should have checked if they still lived here the last several times I was here. I really hope I didn't waste my time by coming here." Emerald sighed. "Well. No time to complain. I have to get started. We don't have a lot of time. But where should I start?"

Sighing, Emerald took out her scroll and checked the time. Seeing that it was only half past twelve, she figured she could try and find the Arc residence by herself. And if she couldn't find it after an hour or so, she would ask around.

'At least it's a nice day. Too bad I didn't bring my swimwear. I bet the beach would be awesome now. But maybe I could swipe a pair from the stores after I find out of the family is here or not.' With her mind made up, Emerald set out to find the Arc Residence.

Two Hours Later

Arc Residence

"And that's all there is to it. Wait. No. That's not what I mean. I mean, that's everything about it." Jett said as he and his wife finished up everything about the marriage contracts.

"Pretty much. So you see, Jaune. We didn't do this out of malice or anything like that. It was a mistake that happened during our... more adventurous years. A mistake that we hoped to correct for a long time but never could. We're sorry this happened, Jaune." Aurelia said.

"I know. I don't hold it against either of you. As you said, this happened during those years. And you tried to fix it. And I know you two wouldn't do something like this to get rid of me or anything like that, so it's fine." Jaune said.

"Please don't be-"

"As I said, I'm not mad nor disappointed. It was just overwhelming and is still kind of a shock. I'm still processing this. And besides, like you just said, you tried to fix it. You didn't try to cover it up like others might have done. I'm grateful that you told me about this. Although, I would have preferred to learn about it a while ago so I would have more time to get to know the other instead of only having four months." Jaune interjected with a small smile to assure his parents that he meant what he said.

"Thank you, Jaune." Jett and Aurelia said, happy their son wasn't mad at them.

"We must say, Jaune. You're handling this a lot better than we expected." The twins simultaneously said.

"I don't think I will ever get used to that." Coco whispered, with the others agreeing.

"Well, as I said, I'm still trying to process everything, as it was quite a shock. But it seems like luck and favor were on my side since I know about half the people I'm marrying. And it did help me realize my feelings for two of them and get to know the others better." Jaune said, smiling as Nora and Pyrrha leaned into him before kissing his cheeks. And while Velvet was upset that she couldn't do the same, at least not yet, she smiled when Jaune reached over, grabbed her hand, and squeezed it.

"Yeah. Oum must have been watching over you. In fact, I think he changed your fate so it can be like this." Dahlia said.

"Dahlia's right. The odds of this happening were a billion to one." Terra added.

"And I still think that is an understatement." Jaune said, blushing when Velvet, not wanting to be left out, moved to sit on his lap again before wrapping her arms around him. And while Jaune still didn't see Velvet that way yet, he felt touched that she loved and trusted him enough to do that without hesitation. *'But maybe I should take Velvet on an actual date first before Coco or the others.'*

"But what about the other two? Sorry, I forgot your names." Aurelia said, pointing to Velvet and Coco.

"I'm Velvet Scarlatina." Velvet answered, snuggling into Jaune. "And Jaune and I aren't dating yet. We agreed to go slow and get to know each other better before becoming serious."

"But judging by how you're cuddling our brother, I'd say you can't wait until you get much more intimate if you catch my meaning." Saphron said, causing Velvet to blush and hide her face in Jaune's

chest. And everyone else knew that Saphron was going to tease Velvet to no end.

"And you?" Jett asked, looking at Coco.

"I'm Coco Adel. And honestly, I still see Arc as an acquaintance, maybe a friend. But as for dating and all that, not yet." Coco answered.

"Wait. Why did you use Jaune's last name?" Clementine asked, curious.

"We're still not on a first-name basis. That's why I called him Arc. But I let him use my first name."

"That's nice. But hopefully, that would change in the future." Aurelia said, smiling.

"Maybe."

"But I'm just glad that our son knows some of the girls he will be marrying personally. And that they are all as nice as you four." Jett said.

"Hopefully, the others will be the same." Dahlia said.

"As much as I don't want to admit this, hopefully, the others don't freak out and chase Arc down like I did." Coco nervously said.

"Really?" The others asked, surprised.

"Yeah."

"But it was in the heat of the moment, along with some confusion and misunderstanding. Coco already apologized for everything. We're good now." Jaune quickly interjected.

"Okay. As long as you apologized, everything is good." Aurelia said, relieved.

"But speaking of others. Did you know that three of the people Jaune is going to marry are... not good?" Ren asked.

"What do you mean?" Clementine asked, confused.

"Jaune doesn't want us to call them criminals anymore. And I understand where he is coming from. But three of them are criminals. One is Neo, the partner of Roman Torchwich. And the other two are the Malachite Twins. While we don't know much about them, we know they are part of Junior's gang, which is one of the strongest ones in all of Vale." Pyrrha explained.

"How did that even happen?" Saphron and Dahlia asked, turning to their parents.

"In our defense, they weren't criminals when their parents and guardians came to us." Jett said.

"Guardians?" Ren asked, confused.

"Yes. Most of the contracts were signed by the girls' parents. But I believe it was the twins that had their uncle sign the contract. But we're not entirely sure, so take that with a pinch of salt." Jett answered.

"Do you know why or what happened to their parents?" Nora asked, curious.

"No. We don't recall why." Aurelia answered.

"Well. Hopefully, nothing bad happened to them." Velvet said.

"But still. I think one of us should be near Jaune when he meets up with the Malachite Twins." Coco said

"Yeah." The others agreed.

"But anyway. I'm glad we got this out in the open and over with." Aurelia said, clapping her hands together as she stood up. "Now. We

can enjoy our time together for the remainder of everyone's vacation."

"And what better way than to have a great meal after a long trip." Jett said, smiling as he stood up.

"That means you guys are in for a treat." The Twins said before dashing into the kitchen.

"What did they mean by that?" Pyrrha asked.

"Our parents love to go all out when we have guests, or there is a special occasion. And by that, we mean they cook a ton of delicious food and bake mouthwatering desserts." Dahlia explained.

"Okay. I wasn't hungry a second ago. But now I am." Coco said.

"Then let's-" Saphron began but stopped when the doorbell rang.

Ding

"Are you expecting anyone?" Ren asked, curious.

"No." Dahlia answered as she got up. "Let me go see who it is."

One Minute Ago

Outside Arc Residence

'I should have just asked for directions. It would have saved me so much pointless wandering about. I'm just glad Mercury isn't here to make fun of me for it.' Emerald thought as she waited to see if the Arc Family was home or not. *'Please be home. I don't feel like doing this again.'*

"Hello. Can we help you?" Dahlia asked as she opened the door slightly.

"Yes. Is this the Arc Residence?"

"Yes. This is the Arc Residence. Do you need something?"

"Well. I'm not sure how to put this. But I need to talk with Jaune Arc and his parents if they are around."

"Alright. But what is this about?" Dahlia asked with an accusatory look.

"I need to talk with them about this arranged marriage our parents made a long time ago." Emerald answered, showing the contract.

"Wow. I wasn't expecting to meet another so soon." Dahlia said, confusing Emerald.

"Another?"

"Come inside. We'll explain everything."

"Thank you." Emerald said as she entered the home. And almost immediately, Emerald felt a sense of coziness and warmth that was absent in any of the previous locations she had stayed at. It almost felt foreign as she was used to the cold hardness of bricks and concrete. *'This is nice. Now, I really hope this works out.'*

"So, what's your name?" Dahlia asked as she closed the door and guided Emerald to the living room.

"Emerald. Emerald Sustrai."

"Emerald?" Jaune asked, standing up.

"Yes. Who are you?" Emerald asked, curious, as she eyed him. *'Okay. Not bad looking. A little on the scrawny side but doesn't look weak. But I prefer that as opposed to those jocks I met at Shade or that team I met a while back. I believe it was Team Crdl. Hopefully, his personality is not at all like sanding paper.'*

"I'm Jaune. Jaune Arc." Jaune answered.

"Oh. So you're the one I'm going to marry in an arranged marriage."

"Apparently."

"So. Uh. What now? Is there something we need to do to finalize this or something?" Emerald asked, confused.

"As far as I know, there isn't anything we need to do yet. Well, there is organizing the ceremony. But the parents are handling that."

"Oh. Then I might need help with that." Emerald said, feeling a pang go through her.

"Wh-oh. Sorry." Jaune said, realizing what Emerald meant.

"It's fine."

"But uh, yeah. I can ask my parents to help you."

"Help who with what, Jaune?" Aurelia asked as she and Jett returned.

"And who is this?" Jett asked.

"This is Emerald Sustrai, one of the girls I'm going to marry in the contracts." Jaune answered.

"Oh. It's nice to meet you again, Emerald." Aurelia said, smiling.

"It's nice to meet you for the first time. I think." Emerald said, unsure.

"Well, the first time that you can remember meeting us. I still remember you sleeping in your parent's arms." Jett said.

"Speaking of which. Did you come-" Aurelia began but stopped when Jaune cleared his throat and subtly pointed at them. While the rest were confused, Jaune's parents caught the meaning. "Oh. Sorry for your loss."

"It's fine. It happened so long ago that I barely remember them." Emerald said with a pained smile.

"But soon, you will have another family. It won't replace them, but you won't be alone." Jett said with a warm smile.

"Thanks." Emerald said, unsure of how to feel. "But anyway. I came to get to know both of you and your son. And to see if there is anything else I need to know about the arranged marriage."

"Well. There are a few things." Aurelia said. "But first, let me see the contract."

"Here you go."

"How did you find us?" Pyrrha asked.

'I'm so glad I don't have to do these missions anymore.' Emerald thought. "The contract said the Arc Family lived here. So I came, looked around for a bit, and then asked some townsfolk for directions when I couldn't find the place."

"Have you been here before?" Nora asked.

"Lived here, no. But I have passed through a few times."

"Like visiting?" Velvet asked.

"Not exactly."

"What do you mean by that?" Coco asked, raising an eyebrow.

"Sorry. That's a bit personal."

"Alright." Coco said, not entirely sure about Emerald.

"Okay. Are you sure you want to go through with the marriage? It says here you don't have to." Aurelia asked.

"You know we should probably check the other contracts. Maybe there are some clauses there that could terminate them." Jett said, with Aurelia nodding.

"I'm sure."

"Are you?" Jett asked.

"I am, despite this not being how I envisioned getting married. Plus, your son seems nice. And it would be a good way to honor my parent's actions. They did this with good intention."

"Alright. But you can change your mind anytime you want. You just have to tell us." Aurelia said.

"I will if that happens." Emerald said. "But uh. I will still need your help."

"With what, dear?" Aurelia asked, catching Emerald off guard.

"Uh, the whole marriage thing. While I know a few things about it, there is still a lot I don't know about."

"Oh. Of course, we'll help you with that." Jett said, nodding.

"But we're going to need some time to get everything together to start helping you." Aurelia said before turning to Jaune. "But in the meantime. How about Jaune shows you around town? That way, you two can get to know each other better. It would certainly be better knowing each other somewhat than not knowing anything. "

"I think that would be a good idea." Emerald said. While she still only wanted this to gain a permanent place to stay for herself and Mercury, it wouldn't hurt to get to know her future husband some more. *'And it would make things less awkward. Plus, it would give me a clearer picture of whether I should go through with this.'*

"Alright. But what about-"

"Don't worry about your friends. They'll be fine. Plus, there are a few things we need to discuss in private."

"Are you-"

"We'll be fine, Jaune." Pyrrha assured.

"And besides. This is something that's needed to be done." Coco said.

"Alright. We'll see you guys later." Jaune said before leaving, followed by Emerald.

"What do you think about her?" Dahlia asked.

"She seems nice. But I feel like she was hiding something when she said she passed through here a few times." Velvet answered.

"We should have Jaune ask her when they get a bit closer. Well, if they get a bit closer, that is." Saphron said.

"Right. Anyway. Clementine. Saphron. Terra. Why don't you three take Ren and Adrian to another room? Jett and I need to talk with Jaune's future wives." Aurelia said.

"Alright. Come on, Ren. Let's show you around the place." Saphron said.

"Okay." Ren said as they got up and left.

"Now. Let's begin." Aurelia said as she and Jett sat across from the others. And for some reason, the girls felt a shiver go down the spines. However, no one noticed that the twins were missing.

Meanwhile

Outside

"Okay. So. What would you like to do first, Emerald?" Jaune asked as he locked the door.

"How about we get something to eat? I haven't eaten yet." Emerald answered.

"Like, at all today?" Jaune asked, slightly worried.

"Yes. I don't have that much lien on me since I travel a lot. So I have to ration when and where I can."

"That won't do. Come on. I know the perfect place."

"You know you don't have-"

"I know. But consider it my treat and today as somewhat of a welcoming gift to the town and, potentially, to the family." Jaune said, smiling.

"Alright." Emerald said, thankful she didn't have to spend her remaining lien. While she could easily swipe some more, she didn't know when she would have an opportunity to do so. Plus, Emerald doubted she could do so anyway since the Arc Family seemed far shaper and more alert than most others she had stolen from in the past. *'I wonder where he is taking me, though.'*

Ten Minutes Later

"A hibachi place?" Emerald asked, confused.

"Yeah. I figured it would be the best place to get something to eat while getting to know each other." Jaune explained.

"Alright." Heading inside, Jaune and Emerald were quickly seated by one of the employees. They were then given their menus to look over before the employee left.

"So, what would you like?" Jaune asked.

"I think I will grab something light. I will have the 8 Piece Snow White Roll and a regular soda."

"Alright."

"What are you going to order?"

"I'll get the 8 Piece Volcano Roll and a grape soda."

"So you like seafood?" Emerald asked, unsure of what to say. While she knew getting to know Jaune better would be good, she didn't know where to begin.

"It's not my favorite. But I do order it from time to time. Although one of my friends is the biggest lover of seafood, I have ever seen. I remember she snatched some of my sashimi when she thought I wasn't looking." Jaune chuckled.

"Was one of the girls in your house that friend?"

"Nope. Her name is Blake, and she's in Menagerie visiting her parents."

"Oh, she's a faunus?"

"Yup." Jaune answered before adding with a slighter darker tone. "You don't have a problem with faunus, do you?"

'Must be protective of his friends. That's nice. Better than being a backstabber like some others I met.' Emerald thought. "No, not really. After all, in reality, they are no different than us. They just have some unique features. But if you take that away, then there is literally no difference."

"Good." Jaune said, relieved that Emerald wasn't against Faunus. But if she were, Jaune would have done anything to cancel the contract.

"So, uh. Who were those people?"

"They were my sisters, friends, and other future wives."

"Wait. Other future wives?" Emerald asked, confused.

"Oh, you don't know?" Jaune asked.

"Nope. This is the first time I'm hearing this."

"Okay. Well. To keep it simple, I'm not marrying a single person in an arranged marriage. Including you, I'm marrying eighteen people in arranged marriages."

"EIGHTEEN!" Emerald asked, shocked.

"Yup."

"I take it you were quite shocked when you learned about this."

"Yes, but shocked would be an understatement."

"Have you begun planning for the future to take care of all of them?"

"Yes. My friend has been helping plan for many things, like a way to bring in enough lein. And I will be talking with my parents tomorrow or the day after tomorrow about anything else I might be missing."

"Yeah. You're going to need a lot of help. But I'm sure the others would help."

"Possibly. But I still want to give them the lives they deserve and everything they want."

"That's nice of you."

"Are you ready to order?" The employee asked.

"Yes. I'll have the 8 Piece Volcano Roll with grape soda, and she will have the 8 Piece Snow White Roll with a regular soda."

"Okay. We'll have that out for you in a moment." The employee said before leaving.

"So, everyone there you will be marrying?" Emerald asked.

"No. Some of them were my sisters." Jaune said.

"Oh, sorry. I didn't know that."

"It's fine."

"Have you met all your future wives?"

"Not yet. I've met most of them. But there are seven I haven't met yet."

"That'll be fun. Or painful. Do you know their names off the top of their head?"

"Aside from my friends, only a few."

"Can you tell me all you know?"

"Sure. There's Nora, Pyrrha, Coco, Velvet, Ruby, Yang, Blake, Weiss, May, Neo, and the Malachite Twins. There are a few others, but I don't recall their names."

"Wait. YOU'RE MARRYING NEO AND THE MALACHITE TWINS?" Emerald asked, shocked.

"Yes. You know them?" Jaune asked, curious.

"Not personally. But I've run into them a few times, and we... helped each other a few times." Emerald half-lied. She was honestly shocked to hear Jaune was marrying a few other criminals. *'This is going to be interesting. I wonder how he will react when he discovers I'm a criminal too. But if I still go through with this, it would be nice to see some familiar faces. More so Neo than the twins, but still.'*

"Maybe if you're still around, you can help me meet the Twins since I already met Neo."

"If I'm still around, sure. Well, if I'm around since the Twins are not in this town. But still, I could lend a hand."

"Thanks." Jaune said as the employee returned with their food.

"Enjoy." The employee said before leaving.

"Cheers." Jaune said as they started eating their food.

'He's definitely nice to treat me to something like this. Still, hopefully, by the end of the day, I'll have my answer.' Emerald thought as she enjoyed her meal.

Half an Hour Later

"Okay. That was good. Thanks for the meal." Emerald said they exited the place.

"You're welcome." Jaune said, smiling.

"So, now where?"

"Hmm. How about we head to the beach?"

"Should we wait a bit before going there since we just ate?" Emerald asked.

"We're not going into the water. It might not be that late, but the lifeguards are off-duty now. But that doesn't mean we can't go there to relax, have fun in the sand, get a tan, or do something else."

"True. But, uh. I don't have a swimsuit."

"Don't worry. There's a store nearby. Just pick the one you want, and I'll buy it for you." Jaune said.

"Are you sure? You don't have to do this, you know."

"I know. But it's my gift to you. Don't worry."

"Alright. Lead the way."

One Hour Later

"Now, this is nice." Emerald said as she and Jaune set up their blankets and chairs.

"It is. But wait until you see the hidden beach. If you're still here tomorrow, I can take you there along with my friends." Jaune said, smirking.

"How beautiful is it?"

"One of the best in Vale. It's just beautiful and amazing. Maybe not the best for surfing, but just to hang out there, there's no better place. Rocks provide shade from the sun, calm winds, gentle waves; it's paradise."

"Oh, you have to take me there if I'm still around. While it's a bit of a shame that it's not good for surfing since I want to learn how to surf, it still sounds amazing."

"Well, I don't know how to surf. But maybe I can get my sister, Amber, to teach you." Jaune said as he finished setting everything up. "There."

"Amber was the one that answered the door, right?" Emerald asked, sitting down in the chair and stretching. While it might not be the warmest of days, the cool air with the sun overhead made it a pleasant experience nonetheless.

"Nope. That was Dahlia. And the other is Saphron." Jaune said, sitting down.

"Wait. And the one with black hair?"

"That's Terra. She's Saphron's wife."

"And the one that was sitting on the couch's armrest?"

"That's Clementine. She's my youngest sister."

"How many sisters do you have, then?"

"I have seven. You only saw three. Two were in the kitchen when you arrived. They are Poppy and Primrose. And they are mirror twins."

"That must be a pain differentiating them."

"You have no idea. Thankfully, they can no longer trick me since I learned enough of their 'tells' to differentiate them." Jaune chuckled as the memories came back. "Oh. And before I forget, which I already did with my friends. But the twins love to talk at the same time with each other. But they only do that to creep others out and sometimes scare them at night."

"Good to know." Emerald said, glad she now knew that. And that was because if she didn't, and the Twins tried something, she might accidentally hurt them. "What about the others?"

"Well, there is Midori. She's the third oldest in the family, with me being the fourth. And she's not here because she's in medical school."

"Wouldn't she have a vacation around this time?"

"Typically. But her teachers gave her some many important 'assignments' that she had to stay behind."

"That sucks."

"It does."

"But what about your last sister?"

"That's Amber. And she, unfortunately, couldn't get any time off from work."

"Wow, you have a big family."

"Yeah. It wasn't easy, but we made it work and love and care for each other."

"Wait. You said you're marrying eighteen others, right?" Emerald asked with a grin slowly forming on her face.

"Yes. What about it?"

"Well, while I might not want kids any time soon, do you think the others might want kids?"

"Possibly. I know Pyrrha and Nora want to have a few kids in the future. Why do you ask?" Jaune asked, curious.

"Well, assuming all seventeen others want to have kids. And if they only have one, that's seventeen kids you have to help raise. But what if they want multiple kids? And let's say you have your parent's genes. Combine those two, and how many kids do you think that will be in total?" Emerald asked, smirking. And she nearly burst out laughing when Jaune realized how many children he could potentially have before fainting. Chuckling, Emerald grabbed her scroll and was about to pull up something she was reading to pass the time when she noticed someone was calling her. "Hey, Mercury."

'Hey, Em. How's it going with the town?' Mercury asked.

"So far, so good. I'm still not entirely sure if moving here would be the right move yet."

'How long until you think you might have an answer?'

"Maybe until the day after tomorrow at the latest. But hopefully sooner."

'Alright. Just be careful.'

"Will do. But how's everything on your end?"

'Everything is done on my end. I just need to grab a few things to make transporting them easier. But aside from that, everything is done and accounted for.'

Meanwhile

On a Nearby Roof

"So it seems like she is doing this for another reason." Primrose said as she and Poppy peered over the edge of a nearby roof.

"Seems like it. But it doesn't seem to be for anything bad." Poppy said.

"Yeah. It seems like she just needs a place to stay that's not temporary. And it seems like she's not doing this only for herself but to help whoever is on the scroll."

"I wonder who's on the scroll."

"Probably her friend or sibling. She might have hinted her parents weren't around, but that doesn't mean her siblings aren't around."

"True. But should we tell Jaune and the others this?" Poppy asked.

"No. Not yet. Let's let this play out and then decide. Who knows, maybe she might fall for big bro's charms like those other three."

"If my charms, you mean clumsiness, then maybe." Poppy said, chuckling.

"Yeah, bro is kind of a dork. But you could say that's part of his charm."

"It is. I wonder who the others are. Maybe Mom and Dad will tell us." Poppy said, wondering who else her brother was marrying. But when she didn't hear anything, she turned to her side and became worried when she didn't see Primrose there. However, before she could say anything, a familiar voice spoke up.

"Date or not, you two know you should respect privacy." The voice said as the owner hoisted the twins two feet above the ground. And before the twins could say anything, the mysterious figure dragged them away.

Two Hours Later

"Enjoyed your nap?" Jaune asked as Emerald woke up.

"Yeah. When did I doze off?" Emerald asked, stretching.

"Not sure. You were already asleep when I woke up."

"What time is it?"

"About to be seven."

"Well. This was fun. But I think we should move on to the next one. If there is one." Emerald said, standing up.

"Yeah. I have one last stop before we head back to my place."

"What is it?"

"It's a surprise. Don't worry; you'll like it. Just trust me." Jaune said with a reassuring smile.

"Uh. Alright." Emerald said. While she didn't trust anybody easily, including Mercury at first, Emerald knew she had to go along with it if she wanted the plan to succeed.

"Come on. It will be nice."

"Okay. Where is it?"

"As I said, it's a surprise. But first, let's pack up and return the chairs and umbrella." Jaune said.

"Alright."

Half an Hour Later

Sheliak's Central Park

"So, what did you want to show me?" Emerald asked, curious, looking around. While admittingly the park did look nice, she was confused why this was the last place Jaune wanted to show her as it was almost too dark to do anything. And while something like this would raise numerous red flags for others, Emerald wasn't worried. She could swiftly knock out Jaune. But also, he didn't seem like the kind of guy to *EVEN THINK* about something like that.

"Sheliak's isn't known for a lot. We're mainly known for the beaches and being like a second Menagerie because of our care, protectiveness, and open arms toward Faunus. But there is something we're also known for that not a lot of outside people know about." Jaune answered as he guided her to the center path of the park that was near a lot of trees. But there weren't so many that they obscured their vision.

"And what's that?"

"This." Jaune said, smiling

Confused, Emerald raised an eyebrow as she looked around. For a moment, nothing seemed different. But that changed when the park suddenly lit up as hundreds of fireflies woke up and started flying about. Their lights gave the place an almost otherwordly feeling, but one that was not at all unwelcomed. It almost seemed like something from a kid's movie.

"Wow." Emerald said, amazed.

"Everyone has that same expression." Jaune chuckled as he sat down on the nearby bench.

"This is amazing."

"It is."

"How often does this happen?" Emerald asked, sitting next to Jaune.

"Only like two or three times a year. And it only happens during this week."

"Have you lived here all your life?"

"Well... yeah. I lived here my whole life. But I technically now 'live' at Beacon since I'm studying there."

"You must have missed it here." Emerald said with a hint of jealousy.

"A bit. But I talk with my sisters whenever we get the chance."

"That reminds me. Where are you going to go when you marry all of your future wives? Are you going to stay here or move somewhere else?"

"I wouldn't mind moving to one of the coastal towns in Mistral. But then again, that's not the best place for people like Velvet as she had real bad experiences there. And I don't want her to go through that again. But you do raise a point. I should ask everyone once we're together so we can work it out. And I just realized there's a ton of other things we need to discuss... as one big family." Jaune said, mind racing. "But anyway. What about you, Emerald?"

"What about me?" Emerald asked, confused.

"I might as well ask since we're on the topic of homes. Do you have any idea where you want to live once we're married?"

"I never really gave too much thought to it. And that's mainly because I kept moving from place to place. And by that, I mean moved homes. But yeah. I guess I wouldn't mind living here in the future since the place seems nice and friendly." Emerald answered/lied. In truth, she had thought about it often and wondered where and when she would be able to get a home, she could call her own. But after everything that happened, Emerald began to doubt that would ever happen. And while she liked the town and wouldn't mind settling down here, Emerald knew she didn't have too much of a choice. Nearly most other towns in Vale and Mistral would arrest her on the spot.

"This is a nice town. And I wouldn't mind living here for the rest of my life." Jaune agreed. "But enough about me. What about you, Emerald? Tell me a bit about yourself."

"Ah. Okay. Well, let's see." Emerald said, unsure of where to begin without giving too much away. But then she remembered she didn't have to tell the truth yet. She could give a half-lie to throw off Jaune. "Oh, here's something. I always like some magic tricks."

"Magic tricks? Really?" Jaune asked, surprised.

"Yeah. I always liked some of those old ones. Even though most of them were simple sleight-of-hand tricks, they were still amazing to watch."

"What about the more modern, complex tricks?"

"That depends. Some of them are genius, but the others are just letdowns."

"Yeah. Some of them seemed kind of dumb or not at all magical." Jaune agreed. "Okay. How about this? What's your favorite drink?"

"Hmm. I've never really been picky with my drinks or food, so I can't really say I have a favorite. But I always like refreshing drinks as opposed to bitter ones."

"Same. I like refreshing ones better than bitter drinks. Okay. How-" Jaune began, but the sounds of his scroll ringing stopped him. Taking it out, he saw that his sister was texting him. "One moment."

'Oh, thanks, Oum, that happened. I should have come better prepared for questions like this.' Emerald thought in relief as she struggled to give some answers without giving too much away.

"Sorry about that." Jaune said as he put away his scroll.

"Did something happen?"

"Yes. It looks like we'll have to cut this... outing short. My sister texted me. She says we need to head back."

"Did she say for what?"

"Yes. My mom finished making dinner. And you're invited." Jaune answered.

"Really?" Emerald asked, surprised.

"Of course. Come on."

"Alright. And remind me to thank her directly. And it was good timing since I am getting a little hungry."

"Then you're in for another treat." Jaune said, smirking.

Ten Minutes Later

Arc Residence

"Well. That was a nice hanging out today. I'm not sure if that's how it's called." Emerald said as they arrived.

"Yeah. It's not exactly a date, but it's a bit more than just friends hanging out. It's weird, and I'm not sure what to call it, either. So I just call it an outing."

"Yeah, it's kind of weird. But I think I will call it an outing too."

"Oh. Before I forget, do you have your answer yet for the contract, or do you feel like you need more time?"

"I need more time to answer that."

"Alright. Take all the time you need."

"Thanks, Jaune." Emerald said before realizing something. "Oh, ah. Before I forget. Do you know when the bullheads close?"

"You don't really have a place to stay, do you?" Jaune asked, surprising her.

"I ah. Of course..." Emerald began but stopped when Jaune eyed her with a glance that saw through her lie. Sighing, she nodded. "What gave it away?"

"You fidgeted ever so slightly when we talked about the homes and places to stay. But also because I grew up with seven sisters. And three of them loved to prank and lie. So, I had to get good at catching lies. But if it's any consolation, you were pretty good."

"It's not really consolation. But thanks for the compliment. But yeah, I don't have a place to stay at the moment." Emerald half-lied. *'Technically, I do. But not for much longer.'*

"If you want, you're more than welcome to stay here for the time being." Jaune said, surprsing her.

"Are you sure? Do you think your parents would be okay with that? Do you even have enough space?"

"Yes, we have enough space. And I'm sure my parents would be okay with letting you stay for a while." Jaune assured.

'Okay. So I don't need to worry about finding a place for the night. And I can use tomorrow to snatch the last of the supplies for the

wedding, get to know the town better or go over a few things with his parents. But I should text Mercury when everyone else goes to sleep.' Emerald thought, smiling. "Thanks, Jaune. I appreciate it."

"You're welcome, Emerald." Jaune said as they entered the house. And almost immediately, they were greeted by the delicious scent of cooked food.

"Finally. You two are back." Aurelia said, smiling as she entered the room while Jaune closed the door. "How was it?"

"It was nice." Emerald answered, with Jaune nodding.

"That's good. But I bet you two are hungry. Come. The others are waiting."

"Oh, mom." Jaune said.

"Yes, Jaune."

"Would it be alright if Emerald could sleep over for a while? She needs a place for the time being."

"Of course. I can set up the guest room after dinner. Plus, it would give us time to go over everything that's needed for the wedding."

"Thank you, Mrs. Arc." Emerald said, smiling.

"You're quite welcome, dear. Now come on. The others are getting impatient." Aurelia said before heading to the kitchen, followed by Jaune and Emerald.

"Thanks again, Jaune." Emerald said.

"You're welcome." Jaune said as they entered the kitchen. Although, he was surprised to see his sister, Midori, there. But he raised an eyebrow when she was eyeing the twins. "Hey, Midori. I thought you couldn't make it because of schoolwork."

"Hey, Jaune. Yeah, I thought so too. But I managed to finish it a lot earlier than I expected." Midori explained as Emerald and Jaune sat in their seats.

"But, uh. Why are you eyeing those two like you did something?" Emerald asked.

"Well, while I was coming here, I saw you two hanging out on the beach. I was about to come to say hi when I noticed something was off. And then I saw these two on a nearby roof spying on you two. So I grabbed them and dragged their butts home." Midori explained, with the twins refusing to make eye contact.

"Thanks, Midori." Jaune said, not at all surprised that the twins were spying on him.

"You're welcome, Jaune." Midori said as they enjoyed their meals. "But once we're done, you have to tell me everything about your arranged marriages and future wives."

"Not at the dinner table, children." Aurelia warned.

"I'll tell you later." Jaune said, chuckling.

Two Hours Later

"Alright. Good night everyone." Jaune said as he entered his room.

And he had to take a moment to collect himself as the memories came flooding back to him. Walking over to his closet, Jaune grabbed some pajamas before changing into them and getting into bed. And to his shock, Velvet was already there, waiting for him.

"Mind if I sleep with you tonight, Jaune? Just this one." Velvet asked.

'Might as well let her. Pyrrha and Nora had been doing that for the past few days. And it wouldn't hurt.' Jaune thought. "Okay."

"Yes. Thanks, Jaune." Velvet said, smiling.

"You're welcome." Jaune said as he got in. And without missing a beat, Velvet snuggled into him. Taking a chance, Jaune wrapped his left arm around her, causing her to smile and snuggle into him some more. Smiling himself, Jaune closed his eyes and relaxed.

'Well, it was nice meeting Emerald today. I wonder who I am going to meet next.'

Next Morning

"Okay. That was a great sleep." Jaune said, stretching.

But then he noticed that Velvet wasn't there anymore. Figuring that she was already up, Jaune decided to do the same and get ready for the day. Standing up, he went to the bathroom and took a quick shower. Exiting after a few moments, Jaune changed out of his pajamas and into his day clothes before leaving his room.

'Hmm. It seems like today is going to be a good day. Maybe I can take everyone to the beach. And we can have a barbeque later. I know Dad's been wanting to make one for a while.' Jaune thought as he walked down the hall to the stairs. Going down them, he was about to head into the kitchen for a quick breakfast but stopped dead in his tracks at the bottom by what he saw.

"Morning, Jaune." His parents said with tense smiles. For a brief moment, he wondered why. But he got his answer when he saw the people sitting across from them.

It was Blake and her Family. And she was *NOT* happy.

'Oh, no.' Jaune thought as he felt Blake's anger radiating from her.

Notes:

Soleil V.A.R: Those are some good ideas. Although, for Weiss, I'm unsure about adding Neptune. But the reasons you provided will give it a fresh twist than the 'After her money' thing. But I'm

unsure if I will use Neptune since it might complicate things, and I'm juggling enough characters as it is. As for Winter, I think those suggestions are also good. Winter does it out of respect for her mother's wishes, but also, I might add that she wants to see the whole picture of Arc rather than just from the stories from Weiss. But I might still have her weary of Arc because of the trauma her father put her through. Although, she would still be glad that it isn't someone like Jacques or some Atlas Elite. And yes, for Yang, yeah, I already planned on doing something different since the usual ones felt a bit shallow or cliché at this point. However, I'm still deciding on whether to have it about Ruby/siblings or something else. Also, for the Winter Stalker thing. Yeah, that was the inspiration for the third option in the last chapter's notes. It came from this story I read a while ago where Winter fell in love with Jaune from Weiss's stories and eventually became a stalker and borderline yandere to Jaune. Granted, it might not have gone that far if that option had been chosen. But either way, while I still need to decide on them, thanks for the suggestions.

Essiter1987: Yeah, that's technically how it's supposed to go. But it wasn't a date. Jaune only thinks that because Neo 'said' it. And Neo didn't consider it a date. Also, yeah, Roman got a hangover from that drink. For Winter, the protectiveness of Wiess will be included, although I'm not too sure about the baby-obsessed bachelorette thing.

Blazingshade3: Yeah, the three stages together, one after another, is an option. Although I'm still working it out for her. But the whole Winter working out with Jaune without telling Weiss is an interesting idea. I might use it. Thanks.

Chapter 10

WAIT, WHAT! HOW MANY I'M MARRYING!?

Chapter 10:

"Oh. Ah. Hello, Blake." Jaune nervously said.

"Jaune." Blake said through narrow eyes. But Jaune couldn't tell if it was filled with anger, annoyance, sympathy, or something else. And he couldn't tell if it was directed at him or something else.

'This is going to be painful. Hopefully, Ren brought those medical supplies.' Jaune nervously thought.

Twelve Hours Ago

Menagerie

'It's good to be home.' Blake thought with a rare smile as she saw faunus going about their lives without anyone giving them trouble.

Breathing in the familiar scent, Blake made her way to her home. And as she made her way there, Blake couldn't help but let the memories come back to her. All the good times she spent here with her family, enjoying life when it was so much simpler. She remembered going to the local stores for souvenir shopping and taking many mother-daughter workshop classes.

"Again. Again." A little boy shouted, catching Blake's attention.

Turning to where it came from, Blake smiled when she saw a little reptile faunus boy playing with his father. The father chuckled before grabbing his son and placing him on his shoulders before running around. The scene warmed Blake's heart as she remembered all the times she played around with her father. While Blake and her father might not have always had the best of relationships, she always

cherished what he did for her. Unfortunately, Blake's relationship with her parents deteriorated after what she had done. And for a while, she thought she would never be able to repair it. Thankfully, that wasn't true. And while there were still a few rough patches here and there, their relationship was rapidly improving. It was almost as if it never happened. Although, Blake wondered if something happened that caused their relationship to strain again as her parents sounded serious on the scroll.

'I wonder what they wanted to talk about?' Blake wondered as she continued heading home.

"Hey, Blake." A voice said, snapping Blake from her thoughts. Turning to her right, Blake smiled when she saw a familiar face.

"Hey, Anastasius. How are you?" Blake asked the local dessert vendor.

"Not bad, Blake. And you?" Anastasius, an elk faunus, answered, smiling.

"A bit tired, but otherwise, fine."

"That's good. Are you returning or just visiting?"

"Visiting. Well, an impromptu visit. My parents asked me to come as soon as I can. Apparently, something important came up, but they didn't tell me what it was."

"Must be something big then. Here. Have a taiyaki on the house." Anastasius said, handing Blake a taiyaki filled with red bean paste.

"Thanks, Anastasius. I'll see you later." Blake said before leaving.

"Take care, Blake. It was nice seeing you again." Anastasius shouted before returning to his work.

Smiling, Blake took a bite out of the taiyaki and resumed her walk to her home. But despite the treat calming her down, she still wondered

what her parents wanted to talk about.

Ten Minutes Later

"Mom. Dad. I'm home." Blake said as she entered her home and closed the door.

"Blake. You're back." Kali said, rushing out of the living room and running to the front to pull her daughter into a hug.

"Hi, Mom." Blake said, hugging her Mom back.

"It's so good to see you again, Blake. I'm glad you're here."

"Thanks, Mom. It's good to see you again." Blake said as they separated. "Where's dad?"

"He's in the living room waiting for us. Come. I just finished making us some light snacks."

"Okay." Blake said, excited. While she would have preferred for it to be a meal since she didn't have lunch, she was still glad to be able to sit down and eat with her family again. Don't get her wrong, Blake still liked eating with her friends and teammates, even if they annoyed her to no end, but at the end of the day, being with her family was better. Plus, it's been a while since she had done so anyway. However, as they made their way to the living room, Blake remembered why she had to make this impromptu visit. "Oh. Before I forget, Mom. Why did you and Dad ask me to come as soon as I could? Don't get me wrong; I don't mind visiting again. But this seemed so all of a sudden."

"It kind of is." Ghira said, smiling, as he saw his daughter and wife enter the living room.

"Hey, Dad." Blake said, happy to see her father again.

"Hello, Blake. Come. Sit with us, and let's talk about your time at Beacon. And then, once we're done, we can discuss the reason why

we asked you to come home as soon as you could."

"Alright." Blake said as she and Kali sat down and started eating the snacks Kali made.

Fifteen Minutes Later

"And that was how I ended up barely escaping detention along with Team Jnpr's leader." Blake said, finishing the story of one of her team's many antics.

"I take it these adventures of yours are quite common." Kali said, laughing at her daughter's stories of her time at Beacon.

"More so than you think. I'm honestly surprised that we haven't had more detentions."

"Well. I'm glad you're having a good time at Beacon." Ghira said, setting down his drink.

"And that you're making friends, dear. It's so much better than reading books while locked in your room. Not that those kinds of books can't fill some missing desires." Kali nonchalantly said, earning a blush from Blake and a confused glance from Ghira.

"But now, it's time we move on to more important manners." Ghira said with a sigh. "We need to discuss why we asked you to come here as soon as you could, Blake."

"What is it?" Blake tensely asked.

"As you know, your mother and I aren't getting any younger. We might still be able to do a lot, but we're not sure for how long."

"And while the Grimm are on the decline, this planet is still full of dangers. We could leave this world and enter Oum's kingdom at any moment. And that nearly happened before." Kali added.

"Wait. It did?" Blake asked, surprised and worried.

"Yes. We believe you were around six when it happened, which is why you don't remember it."

"What happened?"

"It was the summertime, and we decided to take a vacation. After a bit of discussion, we settled on taking a trip to some friendly villages in Vale. However, due to a lie we foolishly believed, we took a bus to get to the next village. Unfortunately, it was a trap, and the ones that volunteered to guard us were part of it. As we were arriving, a group of Anti-Faunus people attacked us. They even released some Grimm they had captured. While we managed to fend some off, we knew we would be quickly overrun." Ghira began.

"Thankfully, as we were running away, a brave young boy found us and guided us to the village we were supposed to visit. Although, we did nearly have a heart attack when one of our attackers confronted the boy. Luckily, the boy did not tell the man anything despite the threats. Afterward, the village took us in and tended to our injuries." Kali continued.

"They even let us stay there for a while until our attackers forgot about us. Even when they threatened to burn down the village, they stood firm. And once all was done, they personally flew us home, but not before we discussed a few things."

"What's the name of the town?" Blake asked, curious.

"Sheliak." Kali answered.

"Isn't that the village that some call a second Menagerie?"

"Yes. And it's a fitting nickname as the Faunus there are treated with the utmost respect. The town is also very protective of them, having laws in place to protect them. They are also very picky with who can enter or move into the town. Moreover, they are very cautious with who they do business with." Ghira answered.

"Well. I'm glad you guys are okay, and that town exists. But what does it have to do with me or why you called me here?" Blake asked.

"We're getting to that." Kali tensely answered.

"As I said, we're getting older and won't be around forever. And soon, it will be your time to take over as Chieftess of Menagerie. That means a lot of responsibility will soon fall on your shoulders." Ghira said.

"Right." Blake sighed. Despite always putting it off, Blake knew that one day, she would become the Chieftess of Menagerie. It was inevitable. And that meant certain things would come with it. Things that she was not looking forward to. However, she still wondered why they told her this story. "But there is something else you need to tell me, right?"

"Yes. You see, during our stay at Sheliak, we realized how beneficial it would be if we were more than just allies or partners."

"And you know what that usually means." Kali said.

"An Arranged Marriage." Blake said. While she knew Menagerie did constantly change to adapt to the times, there were still things they latched on to. And one of them was arranged marriages for the leaders or ones in high positions.

"Yes. During our time there, we made an arranged marriage for you."

"Figures. So, I'm going to marry the son of the leader of the town?"

"No." Ghira answered, surprising Blake.

"No? But isn't that how it normally goes?" Blake asked, thoroughly confused.

"Typically, yes. But the leader never agreed with how it has to be between the leaders' children. He felt that would only lead to more

problems than solutions. However, for legal causes, he will treat it as if it were."

"Then, who am I marrying?"

"Remember how we said a little boy saved us?" Kali asked.

"Yes."

"Well, as it turns out, that young boy was the son of some old friends. And after meeting with them, they were exactly the same as when we last saw them."

"And by that, we mean they were still respectable, caring, and open-minded as their ancestors." Ghira added.

"We also kept up with them after a while, and it seems like the son will carry on these traits. In fact, he seems to be even better than his parents." Kali said.

"Well, at least he will be nice." Blake groaned. While she still didn't like this, she was at least thankful that her parents chose someone who was respectable and nice and not sleazy. Or so she hoped, as things can always change. "So, what's his name?"

"The family's name is Arc. And the son's name is Jaune." Ghira answered, causing Blake to become shocked and tense up considerably.

"Can you... run that by me again?" Blake asked.

"His name is Jaune Arc. He's the son of Jett and Aurelia Arc."

"And the Arc family is one of the more noble ones out there that also helped the Great King end the war." Kali added.

"You said Jaune Arc, right?" Blake asked, still trying to process the name.

"Yes. Why?" Ghira asked.

"Do you know him?" Kali asked, raising an eyebrow.

"That's..." Blake said, unsure of how to say it.

"You know him, but not personally." Ghira said.

"That's pretty much it. We talked a few times at Beacon, but that's it. Although we did become slightly better... acquaintances after he stood up for Velvet, another faunus, and got her bullies to stop harassing her. But still, we hardly know each other. At the very least, though, it's not awkward."

"It seems like Jaune is taking after his ancestors after all." Kali said to Ghira. While she would have whispered it, she knew Blake would have heard them regardless.

"Which is good. If he is even half as good as his ancestors, I know he will treat Blake well." Ghira said.

"And with Blake by his side, both villages would prosper and remain intact."

"You know I'm still here." Blake said, annoyed.

"Sorry." Her parents said.

"Anyway. So you don't know Jaune beyond a few things?" Kali asked after clearing her throat.

"Yes. I know a few basic things about Jaune. But that's about it. But it's enough for it not to be too awkward between us." Blake answered before sighing. "But at the very least, he is nice. So, what now? And when is the marriage?"

"The marriage isn't until the Fourteenth of February."

"Great." Blake said, her cat ears flattening on her head. And it wasn't because that didn't give her too much time; it was because the marriage was on her least favorite holiday.

"I know. It isn't much time. And we're sorry for that. But things keep coming up." Kali said.

"As for what else. Well, there isn't much you need to do. The rest is on us and Arc's parents. But there are two things you can do. The first is to go with your Mom and organize what kind of marriage ceremony you want. There is no limit or restrictions on what you can have, so choose what you want. Second, I would recommend that you get to know Jaune Arc better. While knowing a bit about him is enough for now, it would be for the best for the both of you if you get to know each other better. It would undoubtedly make things less awkward later on." Ghira answered.

"You're right. I should get to know him better since we're going to get married. And at least I get to pick out my wedding." Blake said.

"Oh, I can't wait to help you with that, dear. I already have several ideas for it." Kali excitedly said. Black let out a chuckle at seeing her mother so excited, but she went silent with a knot forming in her stomach when she realized something.

"But, ah. Do we have to have kids in the future?"

"No. You do not need to have kids in the future. You can if you want, but it's not necessary." Ghira answered.

"Although, we wouldn't mind having little blond kittens running around." Kali said, causing Blake to blush. "But if you don't feel comfortable with that, you can always choose to adopt. That is if you want kids in the first place."

'That's a relief.' Blake thought, calming down. *'I don't think I even want kids, to be honest.'*

"Do you have any other questions, Blake?" Ghira asked.

"Not that I can think of. But let me see if I have everything down." Blake answered, feeling slightly overwhelmed. "You guys called me here to tell me that soon it will be my time to lead Mengarie."

"You won't officially lead Menagerie for a few more years, but as you know, time flies."

"You two also put me into an arranged contract about a decade ago. The one I'm going to marry is the son of your old friends. And it just so happened to be my classmate at Beacon."

"Which is a coincidence and a half. I feel like the Brothers had a hand in this." Kali said.

"And the arranged marriage is also to unify two villages, Menagerie and Sheliak."

"Yes. It will help everyone." Ghira answered.

"Oh, Oum." Blake said, covering her face with her hands.

"Are you okay, Blake?" Kali asked, worried.

"I'm fine, Mom. It's just that. I knew that this was going to happen eventually. I just wasn't expecting it to happen all of a sudden. But then again, I should have prepared myself for this."

"Don't worry, Blake. It is a lot to take in. But you won't be going through this alone. Your mother and I will be with you every step of the way until we draw our last breath." Ghira assured as he and Kali moved to sit next to their daughter.

"Thanks, Mom and Dad." Blake said, grateful to have such caring and loving parents.

"You're welcome, dear. And don't be afraid to tell us if anything happens with the marriage or any part else." Kali said.

'While I might not like it, I doubt anything like that would happen since Arc already proved himself to be above those kinds of things. Plus, even if he tries, I can still kick his ass.' Blake thought before letting out a yawn. "Is there anything else we need to discuss?"

"Nothing right now. However, we will need to head to Sheliak early tomorrow." Ghira answered.

"Why?"

"There are still a few things we need to finalize with the Arc family and town leader of Sheliak. And some papers require your signature and Arc's signature."

"Oh. What time do we have to leave?"

"We have to be in Sheliak, specifically at the Arc's house, at eight."

"And from Menagerie, it's nearly an eight-hour trip. So why don't you take a quick nap while we get ready. And I'll wake you up when it's time." Kali said.

"Alright." Blake said before getting up and heading to her room for a quick nap.

"I'm still slightly worried about this. I know the Arc Family is good people, but still." Kali said.

"I know. But by doing so, we're securing Blake with a promising future. A future where she is mostly safe from the hazards of this world, and those that remain, she can rely on the others to help her face them." Ghira assured.

"You're right. Thanks, Ghira." Kali said, grabbing her husband's hand and earning a nod from him. However, she then gained a curious look. "But when should we tell her that she's only one of the total eighteen girls marrying Jaune Arc."

"Perhaps tomorrow. She's tired and is still processing everything."

"Right. We don't want to overwhelm her even more. But I am thankful and surprised that she already knows about Jaune Arc. Well, only slightly, but still."

"It would undoubtedly make things easier for the both of them." Ghira agreed. "But now, we need to get ready. We have a long trip and a busy day tomorrow."

"Right." Kali agreed as they got up and began to get ready for the trip.

Present Time

Arc House

"So. Uh. What's going on?" Jaune asked, unsure of what to say or do.

"The finalization of the marriage contract." Jett answered.

"Wait. I thought everything was settled already?" Jaune asked, confused.

"Not everything." Aurelia answered.

"Your mother is right, young Arc. There are still several things we must discuss." Ghira answered.

"Like?" Jaune asked, feeling a lump form in his throat.

"Your parents probably haven't told you yet. But there is another thing to this marriage than just wanting our daughter to have a promising future. While that is our primary purpose for this contract, the other reason is to have both Menagerie and Sheliak become unified." Kali said.

"WHAT?!" Jaune asked, shocked.

"I'll explain later." Blake sighed as everyone else entered the living room.

"Jaune. Is everything... okay?" Pyrrha asked before trailing off when everyone saw Blake and her family.

"BLAKE!" They shouted in surprise.

"I take this to be a family reunion and to finally let your teammates meet your family." Blake said, raising an eyebrow.

"More or less." Jaune said. "I'll explain everything later."

"Looks like we have a lot to discuss later." Blake sighed while pinching the bridge of her nose. "And why are Velvet and Coco here? And where is the rest of their team?"

"What's happening, Jaune?" Velvet asked, moving to stand next to Jaune and grabbing his hand, causing Jaune to blush slightly.

"Well. From what I know, Blake's parents are here to finalize the... political aspect of the marriage contract between Blake and me. And it's to unify Menagerie and Sheliak." Jaune answered.

"Oh, right. I forgot that Blake is another one of your future wives." Nora said.

"Wait. What?" Blake asked, confused.

"Uh... yeah. About that. You-" Jaune began, but Coco cut him off.

"Your parents were probably going to tell you, but I'll just say it. Arc is not just marrying you. He's marrying a total of eighteen girls. He's marrying me, Velvet, Nikos, Valkyrie, Emerald here, and twelve others. And three of them are your teammates." She said.

"WHAT?!" Blake asked, shocked, before turning to her parents. "Is this true?"

"Yes. It is." Ghira answered, glaring at Coco.

"When were you guys going to tell me? Is this even allowed?"

"We didn't want to overwhelm you yesterday. So, we planned on telling you today. But now we have no need since she just told you." Kali answered.

"And yes, it is legal. While there are laws regarding arranged marriages, none talk about how many someone can be married to through arranged marriages." Ghira answered.

"I'm going to need some aspirin after this." Blake said with a sigh.

"Yeah. I needed some too, when I learned this." Jaune said.

"Wait. So that explains why Ren was bringing all those medical supplies back to your dorm."

"Pretty much." Ren said.

"And what about those assignments for Professor Peach?"

"Not assignments. I asked Professor Peach for help in making some impromptu medicines and first-aid treatments."

"Well, considering Yang is one of them, that was a good idea."

"What about the other two members? Who were they again, Jaune?" Emerald asked.

"They are Weiss and Ruby. And Ruby is the younger sister of Yang."

"And Yang is very protective of Ruby." Pyrrha added.

"Oh, so like how we were with Jaune when he was younger." Dahlia said.

"And how he was protective of the Twins and Clementine." Saphron added.

"We would say so." Nora said.

"What about the other one? Weiss?" The Twins simultaneously asked.

"That was... slightly creepy." Ghira said.

"Yeah." Kali agreed and felt slightly uneasy when the twins looked at her, tilted their heads, and blinked slowly. She shifted uncomfortably as memories of that one movie she saw long ago came to mind.

"Weiss. We're not sure how she would react." Nora said.

"She obviously won't take it well. Weiss might be slightly furious." Pyrrha said.

"But not enough to attack Arc." Coco added before whispering. "Not like I regrettably did."

"Anyway. Do you guys need some privacy since this contract is more political than others?" Midori asked, hoping to get the conversation back on track.

"Yes." Jett answered before getting up and giving Midori his card.

"Take the others into town and show them around. Meanwhile, the rest of us can put the finishing touches to this contract." Aurelia said before adding. "But not too many sweets."

"Alright. Come on, everyone. I know the perfect place." Midori said before leading everyone out.

"Bye, Jaune." Velvet said, kissing him on the cheek near his lips before leaving, causing Jaune to blush.

"See you, Jaune." Nora and Pyrrha said, hugging him before leaving.

"I didn't expect Velvet to be so bold." Blake said, surprised.

"Neither did I." Jaune said.

"But if may be so bold to ask. Why didn't the one with the beret do anything?" Kali asked, curious.

"Oh. Pyrrha, Nora, and I are already in a relationship. Well, it happened after we learned about the contracts."

"Really?"

"Yes. Nora and Pyrrha held feelings for me for some time. I did as well, but I didn't realize it yet. The contracts helped bring everything to light, and after an experimental date, we entered an actual relationship."

"That's nice." Kali said, wondering if her daughter and Jaune would eventually develop feelings for each other. But a little outside help from her wouldn't hurt. But even if they don't, at the very least, they will still be friends.

"But what about the other faunus and the one with the beret?" Ghira asked.

"Velvet does have feelings for me. The thing is, I don't return her feelings yet, primarily because we hardly know each other. So, we agreed to go slow. And maybe things might change in the future. As for Coco, we see each other as acquaintances at most. And we also agreed to take it slow and get to know each other better so that things won't be so awkward when we get married." Jaune explained.

"That's a good idea. It would make things less awkward." Ghira nodded, so far still pleased with Arc. "But anyway. Let's begin."

"There is a lot we need to go over." Kali added as Jaune sat with his family.

'And here I had hoped homework wouldn't follow me.' Jaune thought with a sigh.

'Today is going to be a long day.' Blake and Jaune thought.

Six Hours Later

"And that will happen once I step down and Blake takes over." Ghira said while setting down his pen.

"Alright. That's agreeable." Jaune said, close to fainting from fatigue and boredom. Thankfully, his family brewed everyone some coffee. While it still wasn't his preferred drink, he welcomed the boost it gave.

"What about you, Blake?" Aurelia asked.

"Do you find our terms acceptable?" Jett asked.

"Yes." Blake tiredly answered before downing another cup of coffee.

"Okay. That takes care of this part." Kali said, organizing everything. "Well, parts that require our kids to be present."

"So, we can leave?" Blake and Jaune asked, surprising each other and causing their parents to laugh.

"Yes. You two can leave." Jett said, smiling.

"Yes. Neither of you needs to be here for the following parts. It's just between us parents." Ghira said, internally chuckling.

"That's right. The rest is just some minor things. But I am looking forward to talking with Mrs. Arc about organizing the wedding ceremony." Kali said, smiling.

"Don't forget, dear. We still need to talk with the town's leader to finalize a few things for both villages." Ghira reminded.

"Oh, right. I forgot about that."

"But in the meantime. Jaune. Why don't you take Blake and show her around town?" Aurelia suggested.

"Alright." Jaune said, standing up. "Uh. Coming, Blake?"

"Sure." Blake said, standing up and following Jaune out of the house.

"Looks like Blake was right." Kali said.

"In what way?" Aurelia asked, curious.

"In that, it is only somewhat awkward between them."

"Blake told us that they hardly talk with each other. But, despite that, it's not too awkward between them." Ghira added.

"That's good, as it does mean that they don't have to start from scratch like some of the others." Jett said. "But anyway. Let's get back on task. What else do we need to go over?"

"Well, for starters." Kali said as she clicked her pen.

Meanwhile

Sheliak's Pier

"Well. That was tiring." Jaune said, taking a sip from his favorite type of soda.

"It was. But you better get used to it, Jaune. There's going to be a lot more coming our way." Blake said before taking a sip from her coffee.

"Yeah." Jaune said while tapping his fingers against the railing. "So. Uh-"

"I might not know you that well, Jaune, especially compared to Pyrrha or Nora. And nowhere near as creepily as Velvet."

"Yeah. It was a little surprising and slightly creepy to see how much Velvet knows about me."

"But despite this, I know you enough, Jaune, that you blame yourself for this or think that I am mad at you. I'm not mad at you. Even when my parents told me this last night, I knew you had no part in this. So, don't blame yourself. I'm not mad at you."

"That's a relief." Jaune said, visibly relaxing. "But honestly. How do you feel right now? Not necessarily about the arranged marriage thing, just in general."

"A bit tired since I didn't sleep that well, and the trip here was long. And going over the terms was also mind-boggling numb."

"I'm pretty sure Yang and some others would have fallen asleep halfway through."

"Oh, definitely." Blake chuckled. "But honestly, right now, I feel a bit overwhelmed. I know I should have seen this coming, but still. It's a lot to take in."

"It sure is. Our lives have changed forever."

"But all we can do is to make the best of it."

"True." Jaune said. "And at least we have the others to help us."

"That's also true."

"Anyway. Since we're both tired, how about I show you some of the more relaxing spots of Sheliak."

"Alright. And our parents did suggest we get to know each other better, so we might as well do it and get it out of the way." Blake

agreed while tossing her cup away. "So, what do you have in mind first?"

"We can go fishing if you want. Sheliak isn't the best for fishing, especially around this time of year. But there are still a few spots open where we can catch some."

"Are you saying that just because I'm a feline faunus?" Blake asked through narrow eyes.

"No, not really. It's just that I know you don't like one of the wilder activities, and fishing is a great way to unwind and relax."

"Alright." Blake sighed while mentally scolding herself for thinking that way. She knew Jaune didn't believe those kinds of stereotypes and wasn't one to follow them. Yes, *SHE* might love fish, but not all feline faunus like it. "So where is it? The place where we can fish?"

"A few miles away. We can take the bus there." Jaune answered.

"Better than walking. So what kind of fish can we catch there?"

"There aren't many. The most common ones here are rainbow trout, crappies, and bluegill."

"Oh. So we got some tasty options if we catch some." Blake said, already looking forward to eating some later today.

One Hour Later

"Would you like some music, Blake?" Jaune asked as they stood at the railing to the fishing area. Typically, there was an option to go out on the water on a small boat, but all of them were out of order or in need of maintenance.

"Normally, I would say yes, just to have some background noise. But I think we should use this peace and quiet to get to know each other better." Blake answered as she placed the bait on the hook before throwing it in the water.

"Alright." Jaune said, shrugging as he did the same. While fishing might have been one of his less preferred pastimes, he was willing to put up with it for Blake. "So, do you want to go first?"

"Sure. But let's just do the basics." Blake said. "What's your favorite food?"

"Cheeseburgers."

"Really?"

"Yup."

"I thought it was Pumpkin Pete's?"

"Well, that's for breakfast. And even though I rarely ate anything healthy as a kid, even I KNEW that having that for breakfast too much was seriously unhealthy. So I only had once in a while."

"Yeah. Didn't it have like fifteen grams of sugar?"

"Nope. It had thirty grams of sugar and eighteen grams of added sugar."

"Damn. That's just pure sugar at that point."

"Yup. I'm honestly surprised that my Mom even agreed to buy me that."

"My Mom would have a heart attack if I ever asked to have that." Blake chuckled. "But I'm sure you were surprised to meet the Pumpkin Pete's mascot."

"Uh. About that." Jaune said, scratching the back of his head.

"You didn't even realize it was her, did you?" Blake asked, smirking.

"Nope, not until Nora pointed it out."

"Figures." Blake said, laughing.

"So, what about you? What's your favorite food?"

"Moqueca, which is a Menagerie dish. It's a seafood stew that has shrimp or fish as a base with tomatoes, onions, garlic, lime, and coriander."

"Now that sounds delicious."

"It is. That's why it's my favorite." Blake said. "Your turn."

"Alright. What's your least favorite food?" Jaune asked.

"Hmm. I'm not sure. But I would say anything that's too sweet. What about you?"

"I would say turnips. I could never get behind the taste."

"Eh, I never really liked turnips either. I would eat them if they were part of the meal, but still not my favorite vegetable." Blake said, reeling in the line when she felt a tug. And to her delight, she caught a bluegill. "Okay. Now, what's your favorite drink?"

"Well, I like the People Like Grape Soda. But every now and then, I enjoy a Roy Rogers." Jaune answered, rolling his eyes when he reeled the line back and saw that the fish had escaped. Grabbing some more bait, he put it on the hook before tossing it back in the water. "What about you?"

"Black tea and sometimes green tea."

"Hot or iced?"

"Hot. But I don't mind an iced green tea when it gets hot."

"I prefer lemonade when it gets that hot."

"Your turn."

"Alright. What's your favorite dessert?"

"Taiyaki with chocolate fillings. You?"

"Don't really have a favorite, but I do enjoy some pumpkin pie when the occasion calls for it."

"Not my favorite, but my parents used to make it during the holidays." Blake said, thinking back to those times. Feeling her line tug again, Blake reeled in and was delighted to see that she had caught another bluegill fish. "Okay. Favorite movie genere?"

"Action movies with lots of fighting. Although, I don't mind ones that take some elements of Sci-fi. What about you?"

"I don't have a favorite genre. But that's because I like arthouse films."

"Arthouse films? What are those?" Jaune asked as he reeled in his line. And while this time he did catch a fish, it was too small, so he grumbled and threw it back.

"Arthouse films are movies that are of high quality but may not be extremely popular or successful, such as foreign movies or ones made by small film companies. Basically, think of them as niche movies." Blake explained.

"Oh, I get it now. Like that movie about the kid that gained psychic abilities while another lost his mind because of all the supernatural forces that are in the hotel they are staying at."

"I wouldn't exactly call that an arthouse film, but yeah, you get the idea." Blake said before focusing back on her line as she caught another fish. Figuring they had asked each other enough questions for now, Jaune decided to focus back on fighting. But to his dismay, he caught yet another too-small fish.

Two Hours Later

"Okay. I'll keep these on ice for you. Man, I wish I had half the luck you two had." The local fishmonger said, impressed with their catch. Well, Blake had an impressive catch as she caught eight bluegills and six crappies. But Jaune only caught a single slightly bigger-than-average rainbow trout.

"Thanks, Phelan. We'll pick them up later." Jaune said.

"So what else do you have in mind, Jaune?" Blake asked, feeling slightly better. While she still felt a bit overwhelmed by the contract and news, the peace from fishing that Jaune suggested did help her to calm down.

"Hmm. How about the bookstore or library?"

"Alright. But you know we could do something you like."

"I know. But still, it will give us some time to unwind and for you to prepare yourself."

"Prepare myself for what?" Blake asked, curious.

"My sisters. They will probably interrogate you since they are protective of me."

"Ah. Right. So, let's go to the bookstore." Blake said as they began heading there. "But I take it you're quite close with them."

"Yup, especially with Saphron."

"She's the one with the cute kid, right?"

"Yup. His name is Adrian. He's my nephew."

"Do you have any other nieces or nephews?"

"Not yet. It's just Adrian for now."

"You really have a big family." Blake said, smiling.

"Oh, yeah."

"I bet privacy was nonexistent."

"Privacy? What's that?" Jaune asked, smirking, causing Blake to roll her eyes while chuckling.

Ten Minutes Later

"Okay. We're here." Jaune said as they arrived at the bookstore.

"Huh. Bigger than I expected." Blake said, slightly impressed at the size.

"Yeah. It used to be a lot smaller. But the owners renovated it to open it up a bit more, which is good as it was a little claustrophobic."

"So, where should we meet up after we pick out our books? Or do you want to go through this together to see what we like?"

"I think the second option would be the best as it would let us to get to know each other a bit more."

"Fair. But let's start with you."

"Okay."

Shrugging, Blake followed Jaune toward one of the sections near the back. And as she expected, it was the comic book section. Rolling her eyes, Blake watched Jaune skim through the options before picking one. Figuring that while she wasn't a fan of comics, she could at least check some out. Going over to a nearby book rack, Blake looked through some of the options, but none really stood out to her aside from the one with a glowing blue male next to somebody wearing a mask and fedora.

"Anything catches your eye, Blake?" Jaune asked, snapping Blake back to focus.

"No. Not really. But that's because I've never been a fan of comics." Blake answered. "And that's usually because I prefer books with..."

"Artistic romance?"

"What?" Blake asked, surprised.

"You're Ninja of Love books."

"Oh. Right. Well, those have some plot but not a lot. I read them for... other... reasons."

"Okay then. What about graphic novels? They usually have a lot more plot and often more complex."

"I don't think I ever read one." Blake said, thinking back to all the books she had but couldn't recall if she ever picked one up. But it couldn't hurt to try one. "But I could try. Do you have any recommendations?"

"Uh... no. Well, none that I think you would like. But I can show you where they are, and you can choose one."

"Alright." Blake said before following Jaune toward the graphic novel section.

"Take your pick."

"Okay. Let's see." Blake said as her eyes roamed over the titles and covers. While some stood out to her, they didn't seem too interesting. However, that changed when she saw a yellow one near the bottom. "What about that one? Do you know anything about it?"

"I wouldn't recommend that one." Jaune said, seeing the novel Blake was pointing to had a red blood stain and black dot eye. "It is a little dark."

"Really? What's it about?" Blake asked, curious.

"Think about it like this. Huntsmen and Huntresses become illegal due to the public, and they become vigilantes to continue serving the public. Some try to turn public views around but fail. Then a whole conspiracy unravels one member mysteriously dies. And it goes from there. It is dark and grizzly."

"Hmm. Sound interesting. I think I will get it." Blake said, now more intrigued about the plot.

"Alright." Jaune said, still unsure. "Now it's your turn to pick out a book."

"Okay. But do you know where the novels are? And I don't mean the graphic ones."

"Yes. It's two aisles down." Jaune answered before they went to the section.

"Not too bad of a selection." Blake said after glancing over some of the titles. While none of them could compare to the ones the bookkeeper has in Vale, some were still decent enough. But a question soon came to mind. "Do you like reading any of these books?"

"No, not really. I'm not really much of a reader outside of comics and the occasional graphic novel."

"I figured. But have you ever tried reading one?"

"I think I read one book a long time ago for a book report. But I don't think I picked another up since then."

"Would you be willing to try again?" Blake asked, curious. She always wanted to have a reading partner. And while Jaune wouldn't have been her first choice, it would allow them to get to know each other over something. But even if he doesn't end up liking the novels, at the very least, they could still read their preferred books together.

"Eh, sure. There's no harm in trying again." Jaune said, shrugging.

"Alright. Do you have a particular genre you like?"

"I'm not sure. Maybe action or adventure."

"How about mystery?"

"I wouldn't mind it. But I don't think it would be my first choice."

'Okay. So the detective stories are out. The Three Musketeers might be good if Jaune starts to like reading novels. But not right now, as it's a little too advanced for beginners.' Blake thought before spotting some books that might be good for Jaune. "What about fantasy?

"I'm... not sure. But I wouldn't turn it down if it seems interesting enough."

"Then I think I have a good book for you."

"What is it?"

"It belongs to a series, but I recommend this one as it's the author's first, and it's easier to understand. It's about these kids that go into a wardrobe and enter a mysterious land ruled by an evil snow queen."

"Sound interesting. I think I'll give it a read." Jaune said after thinking it over. "But what about you? And what's your favorite genre?"

"I like the romance genre the most. But honestly, I like any book that has a good plot with decently written characters." Blake said before subtly grabbing the Three Musketeers book. "And I think I will grab this book."

"Alright." Jaune said, wondering why the book was called notebook. "Well. Now that we got our books, let's go pay for them, and then we can go someplace else to read them."

"Okay." Blake said as they headed to the counter. But as they made their way there, Jaune spotted a history book that would help him greatly in the future.

'I better take this.' Jaune thought before quickly grabbing it and running to catch up with Blake.

Twenty Minutes Later

"Okay. This is a nice spot." Blake said as they arrived at the part of the park with tables.

"It is. Well, at least for relaxing in the park." Jaune said as he placed their drinks on the table. After purchasing the books, they decided to grab some drinks from a nearby cafe. Blake grabbed some black tea while Jaune grabbed an Iced Coffee. They would have grabbed something to eat as well, but they didn't want to fill up as they would be having fish later.

"True. But still, I wish there was something like this near Beacon. It would be a good place to unwind after dealing with the chaos that is my team."

"I know what you mean. There were a lot of times I wished I had a place like this to escape from my sisters."

"You know, I can hardly stand sharing a room with the rest of my team." Blake said as she took a sip of her drink before grabbing her book. "I can't begin to imagine what it must have been like to live with seven sisters."

"Chaotic. And it got especially messy when one of us wanted to watch something or do something in private. And don't get me started on sharing one bathroom for years."

"Now, that must have been a nightmare."

"Not really. But it was tough at times."

"Times like this remind me why I am glad I was an only child. I could probably tolerate one, maybe two brothers or sisters. But seven would be too much." Blake said.

"Yeah. But we still loved each other and made it work." Jaune said as he grabbed the other book he had brought inside of the novel.

"Uh. What's that?" Blake asked, confused when she realized the book was a rather short history book of Menagerie. "And why did you buy it?"

"I figured it would be good to learn a bit about Menagerie so I can better help you when you become Chieftess of Menagerie."

"First, thanks. That would help both of us. But second. You know you could have just asked me. I grew up there, after all." Blake said, smiling while raising an eyebrow. While she did appreciate Jaune learning about her hometown, she was still a little irked that he didn't decide to ask her first.

"I know. But I didn't want to bother you too much since you might be a little tired."

'Looks like we'll have a lot to work on if we want to make this marriage thing work. And one of them is to know that it's okay to ask others for help. And maybe I could ask Pyrrha or Nora to help Jaune stop thinking that everyone is angry at him.' Blake thought, slightly annoyed. "But still. If you have any questions, just ask. And I will answer them."

"I will." Jaune said as he focused back on the material. While history might be one of his least favorite subjects and one that he often struggled with, Jaune knew it was time to turn that around. He needed to learn as much about Menagerie as possible to effectively help Blake in the future. He might have little power when that happens, but Jaune swore to do his best.

"Good." Blake said, smiling. "But while we read, how about we ask a few more questions?"

"Sure."

"Okay. I'll go first. We talked about movies. But how about shows?"

"As in, what kind do I like to watch or my favorite?"

"Favorite."

"Oh. Okay. It was this old one that I forgot the name of. It was about these two groups of space marines fighting each other for control of a boxed canyon in the middle of nowhere. It then expanded a lot to show that there was a lot more going on behind the scenes."

"Sounds like a parody. Did it finish?" Blake asked.

"No. But most fans say it should have ended around the thirteenth season. But it didn't. It's still going."

"It sounds like it got bad."

"That's debatable. But the quality dropped a lot, and it lost its charm." Jaune said, remembering how disappointed he was with the last season.

"That's a shame."

"What about you?"

"I don't really watch that much television. I like watching movies, though. But I prefer my books instead."

"Fair."

"Your turn."

"Alright. Let me see. Oh. Here's one. What's your favorite sport?"

"I would say fishing. But not for competition. I like it because of the peace and that I can relax."

"That's understandable. A lot of people fish to relax. Although I am not one of them."

"Yeah. No offense. But you don't look like the type of person to enjoy the silence for too long."

"None taken. I grew up with a lot of chaos and noise, so I feel uncomfortable when it is silent for too long."

"I can see why. But your turn. What's your favorite sport?" Blake asked.

"I haven't played that many sports since I didn't have any friends growing up. Well, technically, I did, but they moved only a year later. Anyway. I would say dancing."

"I should have guessed since I saw you dance before."

"Really? How?" Jaune asked, surprised.

"You really should remember to always close your dorm's door, Jaune." Blake said, smirking when Jaune blushed.

"Right." Jaune said with a light blush. Rolling her eyes, Blake decided to check the time on her scroll. And to her surprise, it was already nearing five .

'Eh. We still got time. Maybe at six, we can head back.' Blake thought as she put away her scroll. She then looked up and smiled at seeing some faunus kids playing not too far away from them. But it made her realize something that she would need to do. "Jaune."

"Yes?"

"You brought the book to learn more about Menagerie, right?"

"Yes."

"Do you think you teach me more about Sheliak? I think it would be good if I knew more about this place as well."

"Sure." Jaune said, smiling. "Do you want to start now or another time?"

"I think another time."

"Alright. Just give me a heads up so I can get ready."

"Okay." Blake said, taking a sip of her drink before turning her attention to her book. While she wouldn't admit it, the graphic novel was decent and not as dark as some of the others she had read. But it was still decent, and the plot was getting interesting. Although Blake would admit one of the character's methods of removing criminals was over-the-top brutal.

One Hour Later

"Okay. We're coming back now. Yes, we caught fish. And yes, we'll get some spices for it. Okay, bye." Jaune said before hanging up.

"Who was that?" Blake asked.

"My parents."

"What did they say?"

"They said your parents returned from talking with the town's leader. And my family invited yours to have a late barbecue with us. "

"Oh, that's nice." Blake said, bookmarking the page she was on. "But we better get going since it's getting late, and we don't want to keep them waiting."

"Right. Let's go." Jaune said as they threw away their trash.

"Oh. Do we need to pick up anything for them?"

"Yeah. We just need to pick up some spices since we're going to be cooking the fish we caught." Jaune answered. And he couldn't say anything else as Blake grabbed his arm and dragged him to the nearby supermarket. Yet, Jaune only chuckled and went along with it.

Two Hours Later

"Thank you for your time." Ghira said.

"And thank you for the meals." Kali said.

"You're welcome." Jett and Aurelia said.

"See you guys, Monday." Blake said.

"See you, Blake." Jaune and his friends said. Nodding, they exited the house before closing the door.

"Well. Today was interesting. And tiring." Jaune said with a sigh.

"I can imagine." Coco said, chuckling.

"Want me to help you relax?" Velvet asked, blushing.

"Uh-" Jaune said, unsure of what to say.

"But who knew you would be leading a place, bro." Saphron said, smirking.

"Technically, no. The most it would be is helping Blake with Menagerie. The town's leader's son will take over Sheliak when she is too old to do her job anymore."

"Still. It looks like you will have some power." Midori said.

"But that also means you have a lot of homework if you want to help Blake properly." Terra said, chuckling when Jaune groaned.

"Yeah. That's why I brought a history book about Menagerie." Jaune sighed. "And here I thought homework wouldn't follow me from Beacon."

"Don't worry, Jaune. We'll help you in any way we can." Pyrrha said, with the others nodding.

"Thanks." Jaune said, smiling.

"Anyway." Aurelia said, happy that her son had great friends and future wives. "How about we all watch a movie while the food sets?"

"Okay." Everyone answered before heading to the living room. However, as soon as they arrived, they felt their whole room shake for a solid ten seconds.

"What was that?" Dahlia asked, worried.

"I have no idea." Aurelia said as she fixed some of the photos that fell down.

"Maybe an earthquake?" Clementine asked.

"I doubt that. But it could have been an aftershock." Saphron said.

"Twins. Turn on the Television. Maybe there is something on the news." Jett said.

"Okay, Dad." The Twins simultaneously said before grabbing the remote, turning on the television, and flipping to the news channel.

"What do you think happened, Jaune-Jaune?" Nora asked, sitting next to him.

"I'm not sure." Jaune said as the News Anchor appeared.

'...While we're still not sure of what caused the abrupt quakes, our seismographs have calculated it to be roughly a 3.5 earthquake. Hold on. We're receiving new information.'

"Okay. So it wasn't an earthquake. That's good." Terra said.

"What about Grimm?" Dahlia asked.

"Doubt it. None of the remaining Grimm could do something like that on their own. And if there were a group of them, the alarms would have sounded by now." Midori answered.

'Okay. We just received word that the scientists have located the epicenter of what caused the quakes. It seems to have originated in Patch.'

"Patch? Patch. Patch? Why does the name sound familiar?" Coco asked. While she already knew about Patch and how it was an island to the west of Vale. But for some reason, it felt like she should know it for another reason.

"Wait. That's the island where Yang and Ruby grew up." Ren said, shocking everyone and making Jaune's face go pale.

"Aren't those the names of two others you're going to marry?" Clementine asked.

"Oh. This is not going to end well." Jaune said.

"Why?" The Twins simultaneously asked.

"Ruby is pure innocence. So we don't need to worry about her. The problem is Yang. She is quick-tempered." Pyrrha said.

"Oh." The others said, now understanding.

"Hopefully, she calms down." Jett said, worried for his son.

"Hopefully." Jaune said before feeling his scroll ring. Taking it out, he saw that he received a message from Ruby.

"Who texted you?" Terra asked.

"Ruby."

"What did she say?" Velvet asked.

"She said Hey, best friend. Guess what? It looks like we're going to get married, whatever that entails. It looks like we can spend even more time together. And Dad told me it was an arranged marriage. This is great."

"Okay. So it seems like Ruby doesn't fully understand what this means. But we can teach her." Nora said.

"Did she say anything else?" Coco asked.

"Yeah. Ruby said she and her Dad are coming tomorrow."

"Okay. So more guests. Not too bad." Aurelia said.

"And that Yang seemed excited too. She even ran out of the house and headed to the bullheads. She didn't even use the door. Yang just ran right through it."

"Yeah. This might not end well for you, Arc." Coco said.

"Unfortunately." Jaune said with a sigh. "Let's just enjoy this moment before they get here."

"Right." The other said as everyone got comfy while the Twins changed channels.

'Hopefully, Ruby or their Dad calms Yang down.' Jaune thought as he felt Pyrrha and Nora lean into him while Velvet sat on his lap.

Notes:

A slightly shorter chapter than usual.

The next chapter will be Ruby, followed by Yang. And then it will be the Schnee Sisters' turn.

Also, will be taking a slight break from writing Rwby stories as I'm feeling a little burnt out at the moment. The story is not discontinued or on hiatus; just taking a small break from it is all.

A friendly reminder: For these couple of chapters, it will be Jaune and his future wives meeting each other and learning about the contracts and what they entail. In later chapters, it will get a lot more interesting and chaotic for everyone.

Chapter 11

WAIT, WHAT! HOW MANY I'M MARRYING!?

Chapter 11

"That was a nice movie." Coco said as the movie finished and the Twins turned off the Television.

"It was. But now it's time to sleep." Aurelia said, fighting through a yawn.

"What about Yang?" Velvet asked, curious and worried for Jaune.

"We still have time before she gets here. From Patch to here is about a ten-hour trip." Jaune said.

"Twelve hours, actually." Dahlia corrected.

"So that means we have time to prepare and get some rest." Ren said as he stood up.

"Good. 'Cause you're going to need it, Jaune." Saphron said, worried.

"Yeah. Wait, I just realized. Where's Emerald?" Jaune asked, looking around and not seeing her.

"Here I am." Emerald said, entering the room.

"Where were you, Emerald? Are you okay?" Jaune asked, slightly worried.

"I'm alright, Jaune. And while we were all out, I saw an old friend, and we decided to talk for a bit. I guess time got away from us." Emerald lied.

In truth, Emerald used her semblance as a distraction to get away from the others. And once the others were gone, she contacted Mercury and told him how everything was going. However, the call only lasted an hour. The rest of the time, she spent 'acquiring' the rest of the stuff she would need for the wedding and stowing them with the others in a place where the Arc family wouldn't find them. But once Emerald finished, she ran back to the Arc house when she realized over four hours had passed.

"That's nice. And that you're safe." Jaune said, sighing in relief.

"Well, for the most part." Emerald said, smiling. "But I did get a scare when the earthquake suddenly hit." Emerald said.

"Uh. We don't think that was an earthquake." Pyrrha said, confusing Emerald.

"Then what do you think it was?"

"One of Arc's future wives. And judging by how much the ground shook, it's safe to say she didn't take the news well." Coco answered.

"Oh." Emerald said, now slightly scared. "What was her name?"

"Yang. Yang Xiao Ling." Nora answered.

"Uh. Should we do something? And is she coming here right, or not?"

"From what Ruby said, they are on their way now. But if they are taking the bullheads, which is very likely, it will be about twelve hours before they get here." Jaune answered.

"So we have time to prepare and get some rest." Terra added.

"But to be on the safe side, should Jaune sleep in a place that's more secure?"

"You're right. But where can he sleep?" Velvet asked.

"We have an old bunker out back." Midori casually answered. But she became confused when Jaune's friends gave her a surprised look. "What?"

"Why do you have a bunker?" Ren asked.

"Our grandparents built it." The Twins answered.

"Yeah. Our grandparents built it around the time our great-grandparents died. They made it so that if another kingdom invades or if too many Grimm are nearby, we would have a safe place to hide until everything calms down." Jaune added.

"Yeah. That was good thinking." Coco said.

"You never know what's going to happen." Ren agreed.

"True." Dahlia and Midori said.

"Like Jaune marrying eighteen girls." Clementine said.

"Is it still in good condition?" Pyrrha asked.

"And how much punishment can it withstand?" Nora asked.

"Oh, it can withstand a lot of punishment." Dahlia said.

"And we have been maintaining it. But there are a few cracks here and there since we still have to patch them." Saphon added.

"Although one of the doors is a little hard to open since the hinges are rusted. But it belongs to the storage room, so it doesn't matter." Jett added.

"I-is it soundproof?" Velvet asked, confusing most but earning a smirk and raised eyebrow from Coco, Saphron, and Emerald.

"Well, it's underground. So, I would say so. Why?" Aurelia asked, curious.

"So in case anything happens, we would be able to hear it."

"Oh. Okay. It's mostly soundproof. But there is an alarm system we installed a few years ago."

"And there is a tv there to keep up with the news." Jett added.

"Maybe Jaune can spend the night there to be safe in case Yang gets here sooner than we expect." Velvet said, still blushing while holding Jaune's hand.

"Good idea, Velvet. And there's an emergency back door exit he can use to escape if Yang arrives and tries to get in." Jett said.

"But it's ultimately up to Jaune if he wants to stay there for the night." Saphron said.

"I think that will be a good idea." Jaune said before yawning. "I think I will take a quick shower before heading there since it's late."

"Yeah. It is late." Terra agreed as she carried a sleeping Adrian.

"And the earlier we go to bed, the earlier we rise. And we will have a long day tomorrow." Jett said.

"And that would give me the time to organize and prepare the medical supplies we brought." Ren said.

"If you want, I can help. While I still have half a year to go with Medical School, I know my way around medicine and first aid." Midori offered.

"I would appreciate it. Especially since we have a lot to organize, and Jaune will probably need all of it."

"I should also go tomorrow and meet with Davion and Marik so they can get ready." Jett said.

"Who?" The others asked.

"Davion is the name of the town's leader. And Marik is the name of the militia's leader." Jaune explained.

"Oh." The other said.

"That's a good idea, Jett. If that girl can cause an earthquake, who knows what kind of damage she can cause to the town when she gets here?" Aurelia said before letting a small yawn. "So, this is how it should be. Ren and Midori can organize the medical supplies. Jaune will sleep in the bunker, and Jett can warn the leaders early tomorrow."

"But I think some of us should go into the bunker to protect Jaune in case Yang gets into the bunker." Clementine said.

"And some should stay here with the rest of us. If we can prevent the girl from entering the bunker, we can stop a lot of drama from even starting." The Twins simultaneously said.

"Yeah. We should do that. The quicker we stop Yang, the better." Pyrrha agreed.

"So, who wants to go-" Jett began, but Velvet cut him off.

"I'll go with him." She immediately said, causing some to chuckle, Coco and Saphron to smirk, and Jaune to blush.

"I'll go too." Emerald said.

"Do you know how to fight?" Midori asked.

"Yes. I might not be the best, but I can more than hold my own."

"Do you have a weapon?" Dahlia asked.

"Or do you fight only with your fists?" Terra asked.

"I have a weapon." Emerald answered as she took out Thief's Respite in their gun configuration.

"Alright. Just be careful." Aurelia said. "Anyone else?"

"I think we should let Ren and Midori into the bunker. Ren so he can provide additional help and have more time to prepare the medicine and first aid with Midori." Clementine said, with the others agreeing.

"And the rest can stay here." The Twins added.

"Alright. So, Jaune, Ren, Velvet, Emerald, and Midori will sleep in the bunker tonight. The rest will be here. And Jett will warn the others." Aurelia said.

"Right." The others said.

With that said, everyone went their separate ways. Ren and Midori went to their rooms to get their clothes before grabbing all the medical supplies. Although, Midori did grab some of her medical textbooks to have as a reference. Emerald did the same and grabbed her clothes before heading outside. Jaune went to his room to take a quick shower. Meanwhile, the rest of the family and friends went to their rooms. However, before Velvet could do the same and prepare, Coco dragged her to their shared room.

"So, trying to make another move on our future husband?" Coco asked, smirking.

"I-I don't know what you mean, Coco." Velvet said, blushing.

"Oh, don't give me that. I know what you're trying to do. Besides, I figured out just how much you love Jaune when I saw the plush you made of him." Coco said, causing Velvet to let out an embarrassed meep.

"So. What are you going to do?"

"Giving you a hand, of course. Arc already loves Nikos and Valkryie. But with a little push, he will start to see you in a different way. Come on." Coco answered. And Velvet was torn between feeling mortified and curious about what Coco had in mind.

Half an Hour Later

"Okay. Jaune. Remind me to tell Dad to grease the hinges." Midori said as she opened the bunker door after a few minutes of struggling.

"Alright." Jaune said as they entered the bunker, with Ren closing the door behind them.

"Wow. This is a nice bunker." Emerald said, looking around. While it wasn't the best bunker she had ever seen, it was still much better than others she had seen.

"Yeah. We might not know when or if we will ever use it. But that doesn't mean we can't make it comfortable. So Amber and Dahlia decided to spruce it up a bit. But they haven't been able to finish it since their work has taken most of their time." Midori explained.

"Still. It almost looks like an incomplete home. But a nice one at that." Ren said.

"So, where do we sleep?" Velvet asked, holding Jaune's hand while lightly blushing. While everyone had an open sweater to protect them from the cold night air, hers was closed. And the reason was Coco.

"There are five bedrooms. But since there are five of us, that means we each get our own room." Jaune answered before grabbing his bag. "So we can all choose which one we want."

"I'll take the one by the door." Emerald said before heading to her room.

"I'll choose the one on the other end of the room." Ren said.

"And I'll take the one next to his." Midori said. "But first, we'll be taking stock of what we have."

"Alright. I'll take the one on the right." Jaune said before turning to Velvet. "What about you, Velvet?"

"I'll take the one next to yours." Velvet answered.

"Okay. Well. I'm heading to sleep now. Good night, everyone."

"Night, Jaune." The others said.

Grabbing his bag, Jaune headed to his room. He closed the door before changing into his sleepwear. He then moved to the bed and pulled back the covers. But as soon as he did, Jaune heard the door open. Curious, he turned around and saw that Velvet had entered his room and closed the door.

"Yes?" Jaune asked.

"J-Jaune." Velvet asked, blushing hard.

"You need something, Velvet?"

"Y-yes. Do you mind if I sleep with you again tonight, Jaune?"

"Uh. Sure." Jaune answered, seeing no problem. "But are you going to wear the sweater?"

"No. I'll take it off. My pajamas are underneath." Velvet answered before unzipping her sweater to reveal that she was wearing some lace pajamas, courtesy of Coco.

"I-I... uh. I didn't know you wore those." Jaune said, blushing.

"I typically don't. But Coco swiped my others and replaced it with this."

"Oh. So, uh. Should we head to bed now?"

"Yes." Velvet said, blushing. Nodding, Jaune fixed the bed before getting in, followed by Velvet. He then pulled the blankets above them.

"Good night, Velvet."

"Good night, Jaune." Velvet said before placing a quick kiss on his cheek. She then snuggled into him. Blushing, Jaune closed his eyes before letting sleep claim him.

Next Day

Five A.M.

BEEP* *BEEP* *BEEP

"Huh. Wha?" Jaune groggily asked, waking up. But he blushed and moved to the other side of the bed when he realized that at some point during the night, Velvet and he adjusted themselves so her back was against his chest and his arm was around her waist. However, Jaune's mind snapped back to focus when he realized it was the alarms that awoke him. And while they typically meant an army or hoard of Grimm were attacking, they meant something else this time. "Oh, no."

"Huh? Jaune? What's happening?" Velvet groggily asked as she rubbed her eyes.

"The alarms went off. Something is attacking the town. And I doubt it's the Grimm." Jaune answered. And no sooner than he did, they felt the bunker shake.

"Yeah. And she's close." Velvet said, getting up. And as soon as she did, the door flew open.

"Jaune. Velvet. We have to go. NOW!" Midori shouted as she ran into the room. "GET READY!"

"On it." Jaune and Velvet said. Jaune got up and started changing while Velvet went to her room to do the same. However, Jaune's nerves continued to rise when he felt the bunker continue to shake. After a couple of minutes, he finished getting ready and raced into the main room, where the others were waiting for him.

"There you are, Jaune. We have to go now." Emerald said, sounding worried.

"What about the others?" Jaune asked, concerned.

"We're not sure. We lost contact when the lines went down." Ren answered.

"Hopefully, they are okay." Velvet said as she readied her camera.

"I'm sure they are. I don't think Yang has even reached the house yet, if the tremors are anything to go by. But if we can lead her away from the town, the less damage she'll cause to it." Midori said.

"Right. And once we lure her away, I can try to calm her down." Jaune said, not looking forward to the broken bones Yang would give him.

"I'll text the others to let them know this." Ren said, taking out his scroll and messaging the others. However, he became concerned when it took a lot longer to send. "Done."

"Okay. Let's get going." Midori said.

"But where should we go without getting seen?" Emerald asked, curious as everyone struggled to stay upright from the tremors.

"Through here." Midori said, opening the door to reveal a tunnel behind it.

"A tunnel? When was this put in?" Jaune asked, confused.

"A few years after our great-grandparents built the home, a terrible winter arrived that ravaged the town. And because of the snow, a lot of people were trapped inside their homes and couldn't get supplies. So afterward, everyone decided to build underground tunnels so everyone could go where they needed to get supplies." Midori explained.

"That was a good idea." Emerald said, surprised.

"It was. And it's going to prove itself again now." Ren said.

"He's right." Midori said as she and Ren grabbed some medical supplies. "Now, let's go."

Nodding, everyone grabbed some of their stuff before heading into the tunnel, with Emerald closing the door. However, as soon as she did, the alarms went silent. But it wasn't because the situation was under control. It was because the power went out. Thankfully, the Arc family had the foresight to install emergency generators so they wouldn't get trapped inside the bunker. Unfortunately, it didn't matter.

Bang

Bang

Bang

"WHERE ARE YOU?!" Yang shouted after punching the door off its hinges. Her eyes were blood red, and her hair was on fire as she entered the bunker and looked around. **"WHERE ARE YOU, ARC?"**

Not hearing a 'deserved' answer, Yang looked around the bunker. However, she saw nothing that indicated anyone, specifically Arc, was here. But Yang knew he must have been here. And the medical textbooks confirmed it in her eyes. Plus, despite what most would think, Yang knew how to sneak around when the situation called for it. Additionally, she knew how to tip the odds in her favor, such as creating diversions, even if they meant causing havoc.

"GET OUT HERE, ARC!"

Walking over to one of the nearby doors, Yang grabbed the handle before effortlessly ripping the door off the hinges and tossing it behind her. Stepping inside, she saw that there was nothing inside aside from a shelf filled with soup cans and other canned foods. Moving to the next room, Yang violently opened the door before stepping inside. This time she saw a used bed and some bags. For a brief moment, Yang thought Jaune used it until she spotted a bag with a different crest. Ignoring it, Yang moved on to the next one and repeated the process a few more times.

"ARC! GET OUT HERE! I PROMISE IF YOU GET OUT HERE RIGHT NOW, I WILL ONLY BREAK TWO HUNDRED OF YOUR TWO HUNDRED AND SIX BONES!" Yang shouted as she punched the next door with enough force to send it into the room.

Stepping inside, Yang looked around and saw various medical supplies. There were also a few more medical books, but aside from those, nothing else stood out to her. Punching the wall that caused cracks to form around the room, Yang was about to leave but stopped when she caught something from the corner of her eye. Walking over to it, Yang picked up the carefully folded paper and opened it. At first, she didn't know what she was looking at, but Yang quickly realized it was a map of the tunnels underneath the town.

"Hmm. I should talk with Dad and see if he can get the council to do the same with Patch." Yang said as she folded the paper and pocketed it, only to pull it out a second later when she realized something. "Wait. Jaune was clearly here moments ago. He and whoever he was with must have gone through the tunnels. Oh, ho, ho, ho. Big mistake leaving this behind, Jaune. Now, you're **FUTURE WIFE IS COMING FOR YOUR FUTURE BROKEN BODY!"**

Growling, Yang left the room and looked around for any doors she had yet to 'open.' Spotting one on the other end of the bunker, Yang ran over to it and ripped it off the hinges. And she smirked when it

was the correct one. Tossing the door to the floor, Yang balled her fist before running into the tunnels.

Meanwhile

Bullhead flying to Sheliak

"Alright, passengers. We will be arriving at Sheliak in a few minutes. But we recommend exercising extreme caution as there seems to have been an accident recently. We also recommend having transport ready to take you to your destination. If you don't have one, you can request the militia that's standing by for a secured convoy." The pilot announced over the intercoms.

"You think Yang did it, Dad?" Ruby asked, curious as she played with Zwei.

"Unfortunately, my little Rose. I should have seen this coming, honestly." Taiyang sighed as he rubbed his face.

"I don't think anyone could have seen this coming, Dad. Who could have guessed that I would marry my best friend because of a contract our parents made long ago." Ruby said with Zwei barking. Yet, Taiyang smirked at his younger daughter's innocence as she completely missed the point.

'She is certainly taking it a lot better than I expected. A lot better than Yang. But I wonder why. Maybe I should have a talk with her later to see if I need to give her the special talk or not.' Taiyang thought.

"So when are our weddings?"

"For you, February six. For your sister, February fifth."

"I should probably start figuring out what kind I want."

"Do you have any idea about what kind of wedding you want yet?"

"Maybe a small one. And maybe just have the families present and no one else. But I need a little time to think about it." Ruby answered as the bullhead landed.

"Well. Once we calm down, Yang, we can discuss it together."

"Hopefully, Jaune is okay."

"I'm sure he is. But on an unrelated note. He has his aura unlocked, right?"

"Yup. Jaune has his aura unlocked. And I think he has the biggest aura reserve in Beacon. Well, at least for the First Year students." Ruby answered as they exited the bullhead. "Why?"

"No reason. Just curious." Taiyang answered as a lady approached them.

"Excuse me. Do you two have a ride to your destination? Or do you need our service?" The lady asked.

"Who are you?" Taiyang asked, crossing his arms.

"My name is Candace Allard. I am the Town's Leader's assistant. But I am also the second in command for the town's militia." Candace answered before giving a small bow. "Now. Do you have a ride, or do you require one?"

"We could use a ride to our destination."

"Where to?"

"The Arc House, if you know where it is."

"No. Absolutely not."

"Why not?" Ruby asked, curious.

"Someone is attacking the town. And from what Jett Arc told us, the person is targeting the Arc Family."

'We REALLY need to work on Yang's anger.' Taiyang thought, pinching the bridge of his nose. "Yes. We figured.

"You... figured?" Candace asked, confused.

"That's my daughter. She went on a rampage after I told her the news that she was in an arranged marriage contract." Taiyang answered before sighing. "Don't worry. That's one of the reasons we're here. To find Yang and calm her down."

"If that's the case, we greatly appreciate your help." Candace said before everyone crouched when they heard something explode with enough force that it shook the ground for a solid ten seconds. "And the quicker, the better for everyone."

"Do you know what damage she caused so far?"

"Severe damage."

"Can you tell me what kind of damage?"

"She destroyed a quarter of the town's barrier, about fifteen roads, structural damage to several buildings, knocked down eighteen electrical poles, which caused severe stress to the power grid, destroyed private property, put about twenty militia members in the intensive care unit, and wrecked several cars."

"That's a lot." Taiyang said, worried about the cost. While he might have saved up quite a lot of lien from his work and days as a huntsman, he was worried it might not be enough or bankrupt the family.

"It is. That's why I am here to help people get to their destinations safely. The rest are on border patrol for Grimm. Hopefully, we can

recover from this soon." Candace said, sounding unsure. "Anyway. Let's get going."

"Right." Taiyang said before he and Ruby followed Candace to a nearby armored car.

Ten Minutes Later

Arc Residence

"Okay. I got the generators up and running." Jett said as he entered the living room.

"And I managed to get Adrian to go to sleep again." Terra added as she and Saphron entered the living room as well.

"Thank Oum." Pyrrha said as the twins flipped the lights on.

"Now we can see what caused the power to go out and what caused all the shakes." Aurelia said, grabbing the remote.

"We should call Jaune and the others to see if they are okay." Nora said, taking out her scroll. But she became worried when her scroll couldn't send the message. "That's weird. It keeps saying unable to send message."

"Hmm. Let me try." Coco said, trying on her scroll, only to get the same result.

"Samne for me as well." Saphron said.

"Do you think they are okay?" Pyrrha asked, worried. While she knew Velvet and Ren were skilled, she wasn't sure how long they would last before Yang overwhelmed them. And she couldn't speak for Emerald as she had yet to see her in action. But Pyrrha knew for a fact that Jaune would not last long at all against Yang despite the improvements he made in their training.

"Hopefully." Clementine said.

"Wait. Maybe they went into the tunnels." Dahlia said.

"Oh, right. The tunnels. I forgot about those." Jett said.

"Uh, care to fill the rest of us in." Coco said.

"A long time ago, there was a terrible winter. And a lot of people died because they couldn't get the supplies they needed due to the snow trapping them inside their homes. So the town decided to build underground tunnels so everyone could get to where they needed and receive supplies should another winter like that happen. Thankfully, it never happened again. As such, many forgot about it." Aurelia explained.

"But perhaps after hearing the tremors, Jaune and the others headed into the tunnel." The Twins said.

"Possibly." Jett said before sighing.

"Is there a way to contact them?" Nora asked.

"No. Not yet, at least. They are still working on repairing communications after a collapse cut off a lot of the lines and destroyed most of the equipment." Dahlia answered.

"So the only to communicate with them is to go down in the tunnels and find them?" Pyrrha asked.

"Unfortunately." Jett answered.

"Damn."

"Well. It looks like we have to find our future husband and get him out of there before Yang finds him." Coco said, grabbing her weapon.

"Right." The others said as they grabbed their weapons.

"If you're going down there, you're going to need a guide since it's practically like a maze." Dahlia said before running to the kitchen and returning with a folded-up map.

"Are you sure about this, Sweetie? You don't have any fighting experience?" Aurelia asked, worried.

"I know. But without a guide, it will be a miracle if they find the others in time."

"Don't worry. We will protect them." Nora assured.

"Alright. But be careful." Jett said.

"Okay, everyone. Let's-"

Ding Dong

"Uh. Is anyone expecting anyone?" Clementine asked.

"No." The others answered.

"We'll get it." The Twins said before rushing out of the room to go answer the door.

"I wonder who it is." Nora said, curious.

"Possibly some telemarketers from Atlas." Aurelia said.

"Well, that's one way to insult an old friend." A voice chuckled.

"TAIYANG!" Jett and Aurelia shouted, happy to see an old friend.

"Jett. Aurelia. Good to see you two." Taiyang shouted as he shook hands with his friends.

"Hey, guys." Ruby said as she and Zwei walked up to their friends.

"Oh. Hey, Ruby." The other said, surprised to see Team Rwby's leader.

"What are you doing here?" Nora asked.

"Dad brought me here so we can discuss the terms about marrying Jaune." Ruby nonchalantly answered.

"Right. I forgot you were one of the total eighteen people marrying Jaune." Nora said.

"That's right. And Yang is also marrying him. Although, for some reason, she seemed almost too excited about it. She didn't even wait for the bullheads to finish getting ready. She just ran here." Ruby naively said, causing everyone else to sweatdrop.

"Uh. Yeah. Excited." Saphron said.

"It looks like we'll need to have a talk with Ruby later." Coco whispered to the others, who nodded.

"What brings you here, Taiynag?" Jett asked, curious.

"A couple of reasons. The first is to catch up with some old friends and talk face-to-face with them."

"We have a lot to talk about then."

"It's been what, five years since we last saw each other in person." Aurelia said.

"Six, actually. The second reason is to go over the contracts and see if any of the terms need changing. Ten years is a long time after all since we made the contracts." Taiyang said.

"Good idea. So much has changed in that time."

"Like our son becoming friends with some of his future wives." Jett added.

"But the most important reason we came here is to stop Yang from murdering your son." Taiyang said, snapping Jett and Aurelia back to focus.

"RIGHT!" Jett and Aurelia shouted.

"Do you know where he is?"

"We think he and a few others are in the underground tunnels." Saphron answered.

"And we were just about to leave to find him." Dahlia added.

"Wait. All of you were about to go?" Taiyang asked.

"Yes." Nora answered.

"Why? Do you have a better plan?" Coco asked, lowering her shades.

"Yes. Some of us should stay here in case Jaune returns. That way, we can protect him in case Yang is right on his tail or comes here."

"That's true. He might even be on his way here right now. But can we ask the militia for help?" Pyrrha asked.

"No. Candace told us that Yang destroyed most of their vehicles and injured a lot of them." Ruby answered.

"Candace?" The others asked.

"The town's leader's assistant and second in command for the militia." Clementine explained.

"And because of this, she had to assign all remaining members on border patrol." Taiyang said.

"Okay. Yeah. So some of us should stay here in case Jaune comes here, and the rest should head into the tunnels." Nora said.

"Who should go then?" The twins asked.

"I think Nikos and I should stay behind. Valkyrie can go since Jaune already has Emerald, Velvet, and Ren with him." Coco answered.

"I can help. And we can have Zwei track them down." Ruby said with Zwei barking.

"And I can come too. I might not be as spry as I used to be, but I can still more than hold my own. Plus, I might be able to calm down Yang before a fight breaks out." Taiyang added.

"Alright. It will be good if we can avoid a fight with her. But we need to go now." Dahlia said.

"Good luck, everyone." Aurelia said as the others followed Dahlia out back to the bunker.

"Do you think they will find Jaune in time?" Pyrrha asked.

"Hopefully." Clementine said.

"They probably will since Dahlia wasn't lying. It is a maze down there. And without a map, you can easily get lost." Saphron said.

"And Midori knows to always take one with her." Jett added.

"So they will find him." Primrose began.

"While Yang gets lost." Poppy finished.

"And if Ruby's dog can track Jaune down, they will probably be back within the hour." Coco said.

"But in the meantime, we should get ready. We don't know how Yang will react or if her father can calm her down in time." Terra said.

"Right." Everyone else said before leaving to get ready.

A few moments later

"Wow. She tore down the doors like they were paper." Dahlia said as they arrived at the bunker.

"Now I'm worried for Jaune." Nora said as they investigated the bunker to see if there was any trace or hint about where the others went.

"Why? This just means that Yang is excited about this whole marriage thing." Ruby said, causing the others to scratch the back of their heads.

"Uh. Ruby." Taiynag said.

"Yes, Dad?"

"Remind me that I need to talk with you about something important after we save Jaune."

"Okay, Dad."

'This is going to be a long day. I wish Summer were still here. I sure could use her help.' Taiyang thought before freezing. *'Shit. I forgot about Raven. She might have had no part in the contracts, but I have a feeling she will try to intervene or add her own terms to the contracts. I have to warn Jett and Aurelia about her.'*

"Okay. It seems like they went into tunnels." Dahlia said, snapping Taiyang from his thoughts.

"And it seems like they were in a hurry before Yang arrived." Ruby said. "I wonder why."

"Hopefully, we can find them before Yang does." Nora said.

"This looks like a job for Zwei." Ruby said as Zwei barked.

"Are you sure he can track my brother and the others down?" Dahlia skeptically asked.

"Yes. Zwei can find them. We just need something with Jaune's scent."

"Like this?" Nora asked, returning with one of Jaune's bags that were in his room.

"Yes." Ruby said before nodding toward Zwei. He barked before sniffing the bag for a few seconds. Zwei then started sniffing the air before dashing into the tunnels, seemingly having picked up Jaune's scent. "Zwei picked up his scent. Come on."

"HEY! WAIT FOR US!" Nora shouted before running after Ruby.

"Is she always like this?" Dahli asked Taiyang.

"Not always. She's just full of energy and pure innocence with some childlike wonder in there." Taiyang answered.

"And I guess that innocence and childlike wonder extends to the whole marriage thing?"

"Unfortunately. But I only have myself to blame for that. I should have asked her if she knew what a marriage entails. And that she UNDERSTOOD IT FULLY! AND I MARRIED TWICE! I should have been more prepared for this."

"Yeah, you should have." Dahlia said, earning a glare from Taiyang. "But you still have time since the weddings are not until February. That gives you plenty of time to talk with your daughter."

"You're right."

"But we won't have any time if we don't rescue Jaune." Nora said, surprising the two. And before they could say anything, they felt the ground shake for five seconds. "Hurry!"

"Right. Come on." Taiyang said as they rushed into the tunnel.

Meanwhile

"Okay. Now I'm starting to think that we need to get you out of here before Yang's anger attracts any Grimm." Midori said as they continued walking through the labyrinth of tunnels.

"But Yang would just follow him." Emerald said.

"Still, it would be better if I'm away from everyone so they don't get caught in the crossfire." Jaune said.

"True. But where should we go?"

"Maybe Menagerie?" Velvet suggested.

"I'm not too sure about that. But let's keep that as a backup option." Jaune said.

"Is there another village or town that could take us in?" Ren asked.

"There are two towns nearby. New Abilene and Rasalhauge. And I'm pretty sure they could take us in for the night."

"But neither of them are in walking distance. We will need to take a bullhead to get there." Midori said before everyone tensed when they heard an explosion that seemed to be a few miles away. "Well, there goes the bullheads option."

"Are there any other ways to get to them?" Velvet asked.

"We can take a boat. Well, if there are any operational left." Jaune asked.

"Man. I've never been one for boats." Emerald said, not looking forward to getting on a boat. However, she tensed up when the tunnels shook. And she would have fallen had Jaune not caught her

in time and helped her stay on her feet. "But I think I will make an exception this time."

"Do you know how to get to the boats?" Ren asked.

"No. I forgot to take the map with me. So we're flying blind down here." Midori answered.

"For all we know, we might have already passed them or have been going in the opposite direction." Jaune added.

"If that's the case, I think we should risk surfacing." Ren said.

"Are you sure about that?" Velvet nervously asked. While she knew she could handle Yang and possibly defeat her, she did not want to risk Jaune or his sister getting hurt.

"Yes. As Midori said, we're flying blind down here. While we might not have as much cover on the streets, we would at least know where we are going. And we could possibly get some assistance if we spot any militia."

"True." Velvet reluctantly said. While there was an easier chance to lose Yang in the tunnels, it was also easy for them to get lost. Or buried if the tremors kept persisting.

"What about the rest of you?" Ren asked the others.

"I think that is a good idea. And besides, I'm getting slightly claustrophobic being in this tunnel." Emerald answered.

"I think it would be good." Jaune said.

"Same." Dahlia said.

"Alright. Now we just need to find an exit." Ren said.

"I saw one a few moments ago, which means one should be right up ahead. Hopefully, it would-" Midori began but fell silent a second

later.

"Uh, Dahlia. Is something- Oh, no." Jaune began, worried. But his worried turned to pure fear when he looked toward where his sister was staring.

It was a pissed-off Yang with blood-red eyes and flaming hair. And her flaming hair was so bright that it lit up the entire tunnel.

"Oh. Hey, Yang. Fancy seeing you here. What brings you to Sheliak's underground tunnels?" Jaune nervously asked as everyone took a step back.

"Oh, you know. I always wanted to travel to new places. You know, the usual things. Sighting seeing, trying new foods, visiting landmarks, but most importantly, **CRUSHING MY FUTURE HUSBAND INTO A PASTE!** "

"WATCH OUT!" Emerald shouted as she pushed Dahlia and Jaune to the floor after Yang fired a shot at them, which exploded when it hit the wall. Turning to look behind them, Jaunea and the others paled when they saw the enormous crater it caused. However, what caused their blood to freeze was when they realized that Yang had destroyed one of the support beams. And not even a second later, cracks started forming all over.

"RUN!" Jaune shouted as they got up and ran in the opposite direction.

"GET BACK HERE, ARC!" Yang shouted before firing another two shots at them.

"KEEP GOING!" Velvet shouted as she quickly used her camera to take a picture of Yang's gauntlets to make a copy of them, which she then returned fire.

Unfortunately, they either missed or failed to faze Yang in the slightest. Knowing they needed to slow down Yang as much as they

could, Ren and Emerald took out their weapons and began firing at her. However, Yang didn't even recognize them as she slowly walked toward them at first. But after a few seconds, she broke into a full sprint while firing an occasional shot. Thankfully, despite typically having decent aim, all of them missed. However, Jaune and the others were unsure if Yang intentionally missed to scare them or if she genuinely missed them.

Ducking and weaving, Jaune and the others continued running away from Yang. And despite knowing they could easily get lost, they took every twist and turn they could to try and lose Yang. Yet, it proved futile as she remained right on their tails. And even when they tried blocking her path with whatever they found, Yang just ran or punched her way right through it.

'Damn it.' Jaune thought as they neared another exit, only to try and find another when Yang blew it up.

"YANG! THIS IS RIDICULOUS! CALM DOWN!" Ren shouted before firing another few shots.

"NO! NOT UNTIL I WRING JAUNE'S NECK FROM HIS BODY!" Yang shouted.

"NOT GOING TO HAPPEN!" Velvet shouted before ducking to the side. She would have fired back, but she ran out of ammo and was waiting for an opportunity to take another photo.

"Is she always like this?" Emerald asked as she returned fire.

"Typically, no. She does have a bit of an anger problem, though." Jaune answered before ducking.

"Looks like you're going to have a lot on your hands, Jaune. And one of them is helping her control her anger." Midori said.

"THAT'S IF HE SURVIVES!" Yang shouted.

"And if you don't get locked up for life, Yang." Ren said as he aimed Stormflower and pulled the triggers, only to receive a dry fire sound. "Damn it. I'm out."

"Same." Emerald said as she holstered her weapons.

"WE NEED TO GET OUT OF HERE!" Jaune said, desperately wishing they still had a map or that he knew about the tunnels so he could have learned the routes.

"There's an exit." Midori said, pointing to a ladder.

"NOT ANYMORE!" Yang shouted as she attempted to fire another shot. However, her right gauntlet made the dry fire sound. Coming to a stop, Yang tried her other gauntlet only to receive the same result. "Huh. I guess I used all of them up already."

"QUICK! UP THE LADDER!" Velvet shouted.

"OH, NO! YOU'RE NOT GETTING AWAY FROM ME THAT EASILY!" Yang shouted as she looked around for anything to throw. Luckily for her, at least, she found a metal crate nearby, which she effortlessly picked up and threw at them.

"You're right about that." Emerald said as she used Theif's Respite in Kusarigama form to deflect the crate.

"LET'S SEE IF YOU CAN STILL DO THAT AFTER I CAVE IN YOUR FACE!" Yang shouted as she cracked her knuckles. **"AND YOU WILL BE NEXT, JAUNE!"**

'Damn it. I have to get Yang away from the others.' Jaune thought as he helped Midori up the ladder.

"HURRY, JAUNE"! Velvet shouted once Midori moved out of the way.

"REN! GET THEM BACK HOME! I'LL LEAD YANG AWAY FROM HERE!" Jaune ordered. And before any of them could say anything, Jaune closed the hatch before dashing toward Yang.

"Heh. YOU'RE JUST MAKING THIS EASIER FOR ME!" Yang said, smirking. However, she stumbled forward when she felt something hit her in the back of the head. Turning around, Yang became confused when she saw a fading semitransparent colorful trail. "What the?"

'Okay. Better use this opportunity to escape.' Jaune thought.

Steeling his nerves and swallowing the lump in his throat, Jaune tiptoed along the wall as quietly as he could while Yang wondered what had caused the trail. And once he was around the corner, Jaune broke off into a full sprint. But due to his nerves, he accidentally hit one of the crates, alerting Yang.

" **HEY! GET BACK HERE, ARC! I'M NOT DONE WITH-OW!** " Yang shouted, eyes becoming red again before shouting when she felt something hit her legs, followed by a freezing sensation. Looking down, Yang raised an eyebrow when she noticed that her legs were now encased in ice. "OH, COME ON!"

'Oh, thank you, Oum and Brothers, for sending whoever that was to save me.' Jaune thought.

Breathing out, Jaune steadied his breathing before focusing on pumping his aura into his legs to run slightly faster. And every time he came across an intersection, he took a different turn to widen the distance between himself and Yang. Although Jaune hoped with every fiber of his being that he would not end up going in a big circle; otherwise, that miracle would have gone to waste. Yet, Jaune couldn't help but wonder who exactly gave him the opportunity to escape, primarily because the trail seemed familiar for some reason.

'Great. Now I am even more lost.' Jaune thought as he stopped to catch his breath. Looking around, he felt a sense of dread when he didn't see any ladders or indications that an exit was nearby. And that sense of dread turned into a pit in his stomach when he heard Yang yell.

"WHERE ARE YOU ARC?! ONCE I GET MY HANDS ON YOU, YOU'RE GOING TO WISH THAT YOU DIE ANY OTHER WAY!"

"Well, my life is over. At least the others are safe." Jaune thought, resigning to his fate. But he tensed up when he felt someone tapping his shoulder. Hesitantly, he turned around and was surprised to see Candace standing there. "Candace? What are you doing here?"

Instead of receiving a response, Candace smirked before making a hush gesture. For a moment, Jaune wondered why she did this but got his answer when the tunnels shook for a few seconds. Turning back to Candace, Jaune saw her motioning to follow her. Nodding, Jaune watched Candace turn around before running down the path that he presumed she had come from. Figuring he had nothing to lose and that he could trust her, Jaune quickly followed her.

Meanwhile

"Finally." Velvet said as she and the others, along with some members of the militia, finally defeated a pack of Beowolves, Boarbatusks, and a single Goliath.

After getting separated from Jaune, everyone tried to find another way back into the tunnels. Unfortunately, most of the entrances were destroyed or could not be used. And after the fifth attempt, they decided to return to the Arc residence and get to the tunnels again by using the bunker. However, by the time they were halfway there, they heard the all too familiar Grimm siren blaring throughout the town. And with great reluctance, they all ran to aid the militia in defeating the Grimm. While they would have preferred to keep looking for Jaune and save him from Yang, they knew saving the town took priority.

"Thanks again for the help." A militia member said as she slung her weapon over her shoulder.

"No problem." Emerald said.

"But now, if you will excuse us, we need to go find our friend." Ren said.

"And save him from Yang." Velvet added.

"Well, if this Yang person was the one that caused all this damage, be sure to tell her that Davion would like to meet with her." The militia member said before wincing when Midori finished bandaging her arm. "Ow. Thanks."

"Okay. You're good to go. Just take some pain medication when you get back home." Midori said as she cleaned her hands. Nodding, the militia member smiled before leaving.

"I'm pretty sure Yang will prefer to have detention with Goodwitch and Professor Port rather than whatever Davion has in store for her." Velvet said.

"Yeah." Ren agreed.

"But now comes the question. How are we going to find Jaune?" Emerald asked.

"I'm not sure." Midori said.

"But we got to do something." Velvet said.

"We can help." A voice said. Turning to where it came from, everyone was surprised to see Ruby, Zwei, Nora, and Dahlia there.

"Ruby?" Velvet asked, surprised.

"Yup." Ruby said with Zwei barking.

"What are you doing here?"

"Long story short, she's another of Jaune's future wives. Ruby and her Dad came here to go over the marriage contracts and to calm Yang down." Dahlia began.

"We then went into the tunnels to lend you guys a hand and get Jaune away from Yang. And we planned on finding you guys by having Zwei track Jaune." Nora continued.

"But some parts of the tunnels collapsed, separating us from my dad." Ruy finished.

"Hopefully, he's alright." Emerald said.

"Hopefully. But. Uh. Who are you?" Ruby asked, confused.

"This is Emerald Sustrasi. She's another of Jaune's future wives." Velvet explained.

"Oh. Nice to meet you then." Ruby said, shaking Emerald's hand.

"Likewise." Emerald said, smiling. *'Okay. So far, from the ones I've met, only Yang seems to be a problem. But the rest seem friendly. Hopefully, the others are the same. But I wonder how the Twins and Neo will react.'*

"Anyway. So are we going to use Zwei again to find Jaune?" Velvet asked.

"Yup. We just need something of Jaune so Zwei can pick up his scent again." Ruby answered.

"Thankfully, I brought Jaune's bag with me." Nora said, holding the bag in front of Zwei, who sniffed it.

"Hopefully, he can pick up on his scent." Emerald said, not entirely convinced, as Zwei started sniffing the air. After a moment, he barked before running off.

"He's picked up Jaune's scent. Come on." Ruby said before running after Zwei, followed by everyone else.

Meanwhile

"Thanks again, Candace." Jaune whispered as he followed Candace through the tunnels.

While Jaune didn't know Candace personally, he knew enough to know that she loved to talk and hated the silence. But what Jaune found strange was that Candace had yet to say a single word. It was almost eerie. Yet, Jaune simply assumed Candace didn't want to risk Yang hearing them. And if the tremors were anything to go by, Yang was even more furious than before, if that was even possible. Jaune wondered how long before Yang would start punching her way through the tunnel's walls to get to him.

'I just hope the others are okay. And that Yang's anger doesn't attract any Grimm.' Jaune thought as he and Candace took a right turn. And to his delight, he saw an intact ladder that would take him to the surface. "Thank, Oum."

Going over to the ladder, Candace climbed up to the top before removing the cover and exiting the tunnel. Once she was out, Jaune climbed the ladder and got himself before placing the cover back in place. He then stood up straight and stretched a bit before taking a deep breath and relishing in the cold morning air. While Jaune wasn't claustrophobic, he was starting to feel cramped in those tunnels. Plus, the scents of mold and mildew were beginning to get to him.

"That feels so much better. Thanks again, Candace. And sorry- Where'd she go?" Jaune began before asking when he noticed that Candace was no longer with him. "Eh. Maybe she went back to help the rest of the militia. I should find her again soon and thank her for saving me from Yang."

'You already did. Still unsure about this whole marriage option, but either way, I need you alive for this to remain as an option. But since I'm here in your hometown, I might as well see what it has to offer.' A figure thought, peeking around the corner with a smirk. She then 'disguised' herself as a member of the militia before slipping away unnoticed.

'Okay. Now what?' Jaune thought as he pondered on what he should do next.

On the one hand, Jaune could return home so he could tell his family that he was okay and have one of them contact his friends to let them know he was out of the tunnels since he didn't have his scroll on him. But on the other hand, Jaune knew that Yang was still in the tunnels, and he didn't want to risk his family or friends getting hurt. So, the only logical option, at least in his mind at the moment, was to head to one of the neighboring towns to either be safe or lure Yang away from everyone else. After all, it was him that she was after.

"Okay. That's what I will do. I'll head to the shore, grab a boat, and use it to travel to one of the nearby villages and lay low there for a while. And once there, I'll contact the others." Jaune said before heading to the pier. "I just hope the boats are intact and the others are okay."

Fifteen Minutes later

Pier

"Okay. It looks like there are some boats still working. But let's see if I still remember how to work them." Jaune said as he raced toward the pier.

Reaching the boardwalk, Jaune was dismayed to see that most of the boats were destroyed or inoperable. Thankfully, after a bit of searching, he found three that were still working. Unfortunately, the first one was locked behind a lock-screen Jaune had never seen before. The second boat required keys that Jaune couldn't find. Luckily, the last boat's keys were behind the steering wheel. It just needed some gas.

'Where did I see-Ah. There it is.' Jaune thought as he looked around and spotted some jerry cans. Running over to them, Jaune let out a sigh of relief when he saw that they were full. Picking two up, Jaune

ran back to the boat. But as he did, he heard a whistling sound that seemed to grow louder with each passing second.

BOOM

"SHIT!" Jaune shouted as he threw himself behind some crates when the boat suddenly exploded. Looking over his cover, Jaune winced when he saw the remains of the boat was on fire. While he knew the owner would be beyond pissed, Jaune wondered what caused it to explode. Unfortunately, he got his answer a second later.

"GET BACK HERE, ARC! YOU'RE NOT ESCAPING ME!" Yang shouted. Gulping, Jaune turned toward where it came from and saw Yang running down the street toward him. And her hair was glowing so brightly that it almost looked like the sun itself.

"DAMN IT!" Jaune shouted as he looked for another boat to escape. Unfortunately, none of them were operable. That meant that Jaune had to escape Jaune on foot. However, before he could even leave the pier, an explosion happened mere feet from Jaune, sending him flying back. And if it weren't for his aura, Jaune was sure his back would have been broken from the impact and that he might have lost a leg from the explosion's force. "OW!"

"THAT'LL PALE IN COMPARISON TO WHAT I'M ABOUT TO DO TO YOU, FUTURE HUSBAND!" Yang shouted as she arrived at the boardwalk.

"Y-Yang. Calm down." Jaune said as he rolled to the side to evade Yang's attack.

"SHUT UP!"

"Please, Yang. Calm down. Let's talk about it."

"SHUT! IT! AND TAKE YOUR BEATING LIKE A MAN!"

Realizing that Yang was far too mad to listen to him, Jaune focused on evading all her attacks while trying to find a way to get out of there. However, each time he found an opening to get away, Yang literally destroyed it by punching or throwing something to cut off his path. Internally cursing, Jaune rolled to avoid Yang's next attack before desperately looking around for anything that he could potentially use to distract Yang long enough to create some distance. Seeing a tarp and net nearby, Jaune threw himself to them, grabbed both, and threw them at Yang. And as soon as they obscured her vision, Jaune got up and ran away.

"THAT DOES IT!" Yang shouted. And in her blind fury, she punched the ground with enough force to cause some tremors, which in turn, caused Jaune to fall flat on his face.

"Damn it." Jaune said as he struggled to get up because of his aching legs. However, he paled when he felt Yang grab his leg. *'This is going to hurt.'*

And Jaune was right. Gripping his leg so much that Jaune feared his bone might turn to dust, Yang turned around and tossed him toward the boats that were still somehow floating. But Yang threw him with so much force that he CRASHED THROUGH FOUR BOATS before finally stopping at the fifth one while leaving a very noticeable dent in it.

'Ow.' Jaune weakly thought as he slid down to the floor. He was 100% certain that if he didn't have his aura unlocked and a massive amount of it, Jaune would have died from the attack. Feeling his vision cloud a bit, Jaune looked up and saw Yang slowly walking toward him. "Yang. Please. Let's talk."

"Night-night, Future Husband." Yang said as she raised his fist, ready to strike Jaune in the face and possibly send him into the water below.

Saying a silent prayer, Jaune awaited what would probably be the most painful experience of his life. However, he raised an eyebrow

when he saw a hand hover over Yang's left shoulder. And before he could say anything, it squeezed Yang's shoulder. Jaune was confused about what that was supposed to do but got his answer when Yang's eyes went cross-eyed, and her body went limp before falling.

"YANG!" Jaune shouted, worried. Despite what she did to him and his hometown, Jaune still saw her as a... friend. And he didn't want to see them hurt. Looking up, Jaune saw who caused Yang to fall unconscious and save his life. "Who are you, and what did you do to Yang?"

"I'm Raven Branwen. I'm Yang's biological mother." The lady said as she gently grabbed Yang from Jaune and placed her on a nearby chair that somehow stayed upright and intact throughout the battle. "And Yang had this pressure point in her left shoulder that, when pressed correctly with enough force, will cause her to take a short nap."

"Wait. Pressure points work?" Jaune asked, confused and surprised.

"Not in the way you're thinking. This was just something Yang was born with."

"Ah. Okay." Jaune said as he struggled to stand up. "Thanks for saving me. But uh. Is Yang going to be alright?"

"Even after all this, you still care for your friends. That's impressive. Most others would never want anything to do with the person again." Raven said before muttering something Jaune couldn't hear. "But yes. She'll be fine when she wakes up."

"How long will she be out?"

"A few hours."

"Okay. That gives enough time to recover. And take some pain medications. Then I'll probably leave town so this doesn't happen

again." Jaune said with a wince. "Ow."

"Don't worry. I brought something with me that would stop Yang from raging or using her semblance again. It's something we used in her when she was first learning to control her semblance."

"We?" Jaune asked, confused.

"JAUNE! DON'T MOVE! RAVEN! STAY RIGHT WHERE YOU ARE!" A voice shouted. Turning to it, Jaune was happy to see that his friends were alright. Although, he was curious about who was the man running next to Ruby and Zwei. "I wonder who is that?"

"That's Taiyang. My Ex-husband and father to Yang." Raven explained.

"Oh."

"Jaune. Are you okay?" Velvet asked, worried.

"I'm fine for the most part." Jaune answered with a pained smile.

"Raven. What are you doing here?" Taiyang demanded.

"Same as you. To save this kid from our daughter's wrath and to review the terms of the contract you and Summer made."

"Why?"

"Despite what I might have... done in the past, I still care for our daughter, albeit, in my own way."

"I doubt that."

"Doubt it all you want, Taiyang. But it doesn't change the fact that you should have at least told me or Qrow about this."

"So what do you actually want?"

"As I said, to save Jaune from our daughter's wrath, review some of the contract's terms and possibly add some of my own to it. But they are ones that I am sure you will agree to."

"I doubt it." Taiyang sighed. As much as he wanted to deny Raven from this, he knew she would just return down the road in a probably more violent way. So it would be best for everyone if they got it out of the way now. "Fine. We'll let you see the contracts. But first, let's head back to the Arc Residence. The kids need to rest."

"And Jaune needs to get his injuries tended to." Raven said.

"Yes. Rest sounds heavenly right now." Jaune said before wincing. "Ow."

"Need some help, Jaune?" Ruby asked.

"Oh. Hey, Rubes. And yeah. I could use some help."

"I'll help." Nora said before effortlessly picking Jaune up bridal style, causing him to blush while everyone else chuckled as they headed back to the Arc Residence.

"So why are you really here, Raven?" Taiyang asked once the others were out of earshot.

"As I already said twice, to save Jaune from our daughter and review the contract's terms. But if you're asking what prompted me to come here, let's just leave it at this. Something happened while I was in Vacuo. Something that I still have trouble believing happened. And now I want to ensure our daughters have a secure future." Raven answered before changing into a raven so she could watch over the others from above.

'Huh. I wonder what happened that caused Raven to be like this. Hopefully, nothing too bad.' Taiyang thought as he picked up Yang before following the others back to the Arc residence. *'And hopefully,*

Jaune and his family are still willing to go through with this marriage with Yang.'

Twenty Minutes Later

Arc Residence

"We're back." Dahlia shouted once they arrived.

"JAUNE!" Pyrrha shouted when she saw Nora carrying Jaune.

"Arc. Are you okay?" Coco asked, also worried.

"I'm fine. Just tired. Thankfully, my aura is already healing my injuries." Jaune answered.

"And who is this?" The Twins simultaneously asked, staring at Raven.

"She's Raven Branwen. Yang's mom. It's a bit of a long story." Jett answered as he and Aurelia entered the room.

"And we'll be glad to hear after everyone rests a bit and Midori tends to Jaune's injuries." Aurelia said. "And you can put Yang on the couch, Taiyang."

"Okay." Taiynag said as he gently placed Yang on the couch. Raven then came up and put an aura and semblance blocking device on her ankle.

"Nora. Bring Jaune to his room while I grab some medical supplies." Midori said.

"Alright." Nora said before running to Jaune's room, followed by his friends and future wives.

"Oh. And before I forget." Dahlia said, turning to Taiyang and Raven. "Davion wants to talk with Yang once everything calms down. And he does not sound happy."

"He's still in charge?" Raven asked, surprised.

"Yup. Old but still going strong." Aurelia said.

"But I fear what he has in mind for Yang's punishment." Taiyang said.

"Is he still as fair and open-minded as he claims to be?" Raven asked.

"More or less." Jett answered.

"Then Yang will probably be on community service for the next two decades if she is lucky since the damage she caused is easily worth a long jail sentence." Raven sighed.

"Probably."

"But all we can do now is wait and see." Aurelia said. "But in the meantime, while the kids are resting. How about we all head to the kitchen, have some snacks, and catch up on past events? Do you all still like coffee or prefer some tea?"

"Coffee." Taiyang and Raven answered.

"With the special mix or not?" Jett asked.

"Yes, please." Taiyang answered.

"We're going to need it." Raven added as they all headed into the kitchen.

Notes:

More information in the following chapters

Chapter 12

WAIT, WHAT! HOW MANY I'M MARRYING!?

Chapter 12

Three Hours Later

'Thank the brothers above for aura and that Midori knows what she does about medicine.' Jaune thought as he woke up from his impromptu nap. And he smiled when he noticed that Pyrrha, Nora, and Velvet were sleeping with him in his bed. Looking around the room, Jaune saw Coco sleeping in the chair next to his bed and Ruby sleeping in his bean bag chair with Zwei on her lap. Emerald was sleeping on the other bean bag chair while Ren was asleep in a folding chair that Midori probably gave him. *'This is nice.'*

"Hmm." Velvet said as she slowly woke up and let out a yawn. "Afternoon, Jaune."

"Afternoon, Velvet." Jaune chuckled as Velvet rubbed her eyes.

"What time is it?"

"Four in the afternoon." Coco answered before yawning.

"I think we should get up then." Pyrrha said, propping herself on her arms before kissing Jaune.

"And get something to eat." Nora added before doing the same. Seeing Velvet upset, Jaune smiled before leaning in and kissing Velvet on her cheek. While he still considered her a good friend, that didn't mean he couldn't give her something she clearly wanted. Velvet blushed before snuggling into his chest.

"But also to check on Yang and see if she calmed down." Ren said.

"I still can't believe she destroyed half of Sheliak by herself in a few hours." Emerald said.

"All because she was excited to marry Jaune." Ruby said as she and Zwei stretched, earning nervous chuckles from everyone else.

"Anyway. How about we all go downstairs so we can have something to eat and see what else we can do for the remainder of the day." Jaune suggested.

"Yeah."

"That sounds good."

"Alright. Let's go." Jaune said everyone followed him out of his room and down the stairs to the living room. However, everyone froze when they saw an annoyed Yang staring them down, specifically Jaune. *'This is going to be painful.'*

"Jaune." Yang said in a neutral tone.

"Yang." Jaune said, slightly scared.

"Ah. How are you feeling, son?" Jett asked, smiling after he took a sip of his coffee.

"Better. A little sore still, but the medication Midori gave me along with my aura is helping me a lot." Jaune answered.

"That's good." Aurelia said, thankful her son was alright.

"Uh. As much as I don't want to break up this moment, but is something going on? And do you want us to leave?" Emerald asked.

"There are still a few things we need to discuss. And we would like some privacy." Raven answered, eyeing Yang, who returned it with a glare as she crossed her arms.

"But none of them require any of you to be here." Jett added.

"But we do have something you all can help us with." Aurelia said.

"And what's that?" Pyrrha asked.

"Well, due to Yang's... rampage, the bullheads are closed. And by closed, I mean destroyed. Davion released a statement to everyone about an hour ago that all working vehicles, both public and military, will be used specifically to transport wounded and supplies. All non-essential travel will be halted until further notice. As such, everyone is stuck here. But that does not mean we can't make the most of it."

"That's right. So we're all going to have a barbeque followed by a movie night outside with a campfire. And everyone here is invited." Jett added while pulling a few lists from his pocket. "That's where we need all of your help. We need you to get the supplies. Thankfully, most of the essential and vital stores are still in one piece. But they are across town, so you may want to go now if you want to get there before they close."

"And if you're feeling peckish while out, I made some snacks for everyone to take with them." Aurelia said.

"Okay." Jaune said, moving to grab the papers and look over the lists. And while not overwhelmingly long, it would take them a while to get everything. Thankfully, he knew the places and how to get to them the fastest. "Alright. We'll be back in about two hours."

"Actually, Jaune. I need your help. Plus, I need to talk with you afterward. It's important." Taiyang said, grabbing Jaune's arm, surprising him.

"Uh. Okay." Jaune said, slightly reluctant to agree as he knew it involved Yang. While he still wanted to know why she did what she did, that DID NOT MEAN he wanted to go through it AGAIN! Once was more than enough for ONE WEEK! But there was another reason why Jaune was hesitant. "But what about the others? They don't know the town at all."

"Don't worry, Jaune. We got it. We'll show them around town." Dahlia said as she and Midori entered the room.

"Are you sure?"

"Yes. It's no problem. Plus, it would give us time to bond with our future sisters-in-law." Dahlia answered.

"True. But if-"

"Would you prefer Saphron to guide them?" Midori interjected.

"No. I'm good with you two." Jaune quickly said. And as soon as Jaune said this, Yang let out a quiet snicker as she instantly recognized the reason.

"Why don't you want Saprhron to do it?" Ruby curiously asked.

"Oh, that's because it's a fact that Saphron will tell you all sorts of embarrassing stories about Jaune. And from it, she will find new ways to tease him." Midori explained.

"Ugh. That's the worst. And I've been on the receiving end of it a lot." Ruby said before pouting. "Why do siblings even do that?"

"'Cause it's their job to embarrass the younger sibling." Yang and Jaune simultaneously answered, surprising each other. And despite the tension still present, they couldn't help but chuckle when they realized it.

"But yeah. That's mainly how they express and show that they care." Jaune said.

"Jaune's right, Ruby. It's how we show we care." Yang said before turning to Jaune. "But I take it that you've been on the receiving end of it a lot."

"Oh, yeah. Primarily from Saphron, though. Dahlia and Amber sometimes do it as well, but nowhere near as much as Saphron."

Jaune answered, earning a chuckling from Dahlia. "And I take it you still tease and embarrass Ruby from time to time."

"You know it. I even did it when we flew to Patch." Yang answered, earning a pout and raspberry from Ruby. "But did you ever tease your siblings?"

"Only the Twins and Clementine. Although, I haven't been able to do so since moving to Beacon. I should really start again soon."

"NO!" The Twins and Clementine shouted from their rooms before slamming their doors shut. Although, everyone who was not an Arc became confused when they suddenly heard power tools coming from upstairs.

"Anyway. I don't feel like getting embarrassed today. That's why I'm fine with Midori and Dahlia taking the others to get the supplies." Jaune said.

"Good call, Jaune, 'cause I would have done the same if Saphron went with the others." Yang said.

"I know. Honestly, when it comes time for the Twins and Clementine, I will take every chance I get to tease and embarrass them. And I'm pretty sure you will do the same for Ruby soon."

"Definitely. Even though I still have mixed feelings about this whole thing-"Which is a severe understatement." Raven interjected.

"I'm still going to tease her to no end."

"Not looking forward to it." Ruby said before sticking out her tongue, causing everyone to chuckle, even Raven.

"Times like this make me glad I was an only child." Coco said, causing Velvet to roll her eyes.

"Oh, please. You wish you weren't an only child so you could tease them, just like you do me." Velvet said with a huff before letting out a

yelp when Coco wrapped an arm around her shoulders and pulled her close.

"Thanks for reminding me, Bun-Bun. I knew I was forgetting something. I sure am glad to have you as a partner."

"Damn it." Velvet said with a huff.

"You walked right into that one, Velvet." Nora said.

"I sure did. I should have kept my mouth shut."

"Anyway." Taiyang said, hoping to get the conversation back on track. Yet, he was glad that his daughters made great friends. He just hoped the others, especially Jaune, still thought of her as a friend after her rampage through town. "While this is a nice moment. We better get going. As Jaune said, it would take about two hours to get everything. And if we don't start now, some of the stores might close before we can get to them."

"He's right. Also, wouldn't stores close earlier today since it is Saturday?" Emerald asked.

"Not all of them. The supermarkets stay open until eight, so that gives us time for them. However, Taiyang is right that the others will close early today. So we should head there first and now." Dahlia answered.

"Right. But before we go." Midori said before turning to Jaune. "Jaune."

"Yes?" Jaune asked.

"I gotta ask. How did you escape Yang?"

"Right. How did you escape Yang, Jaune?" Velvet asked.

"I didn't. Yang had me pinned at the pier. And I'm pretty sure I would have been either one hundred feet underground or at the bottom of

the ocean had Raven not saved me." Jaune answered.

"I wouldn't go that far. But you would have definitely been a few feet underground or underwater." Yang commented.

"No. I mean, after we got separated in the tunnels. And by that, I mean after we got out of the tunnels and you decided to stay behind." Midori clarified.

"WAIT! YOU DID WHAT, JAUNE!?" Pyrrha, Nora, and Coco asked, shocked.

"Yup. We were trying to escape from Yang and found an intact ladder that would take us above ground. But Jaune had us exit first, and then before we could help him out, he closed the entrance and locked it so we couldn't open it back up. And the thing is, the ladder was at the end of a tunnel, meaning that Jaune was stuck between a wall and an infuriated blond." Emerald added, torn between smirking at how angry Jaune's other future wives were with him and feeling the same way.

"Oh. We're so going to have a talk later, Jaune." Pyrrha growled.

"About how reckless that was." Nora added.

"And don't even try to talk your way out of it or escape. 'Cause I will drag you back." Coco added while cracking her knuckles.

"Okay. I promise I won't try to escape." Jaune said as his face paled. He then coughed to clear his throat. "Anyway. I'm not entirely sure. One moment, Yang was getting ready to smack me into next week. But the next, something apparently hit Yang in the head." Jaune said.

"Yup. And when I turned around, we saw a semitransparent colorful trail that was quickly fading." Yang added.

"And I took the chance while Yang was distracted to escape. But she heard me. And as soon as she did, I bolted down the tunnels."

"I would have chased Jaune as soon as he did, but I couldn't. And the reason is something I'm still trying to understand."

"What's that?" Raven asked, curious.

"I felt something hit my legs. And when I looked down, they were encased in ice for some reason. And I'm not sure, but I think I saw the trail again. But it was so faded that I'm not sure."

"That's... strange... to say the least." Raven said, confused. While it was obvious that whoever intervened used ice dust to slow down Yang, it wasn't clear if the trail also belonged to the same person. But another question remained. And that was how did that person or people find Jaune and Yang in the first place. Did they stumble upon them, or did they follow them?

"It is." Jett and Aurelia.

"Wait. Jaune." Velvet said, getting his attention.

"Yes, Velvet?" Jaune asked.

"Didn't we see someone leaving behind a semitransparent trail as they left the music store?"

"That's right. I forgot about that."

"Do you think it was the same person?"

"I doubt it."

"Why?" Dahlia asked.

"Semblances are unique. But that doesn't mean there aren't similar versions out there. Ruby's semblance is speed, and it lets her go

real fast. But there could be another semblance out there that lets its owner fight really fast." Ren explained.

"Not to mention, that person could be testing out a new device for Atlas or some other organization. Kind of like how I am doing with Atlas." Velvet added.

"True." Aurelia said. "Either way, I'm still glad someone saved our son from certain death."

"Oh, please. I wouldn't have gone that far." Yang said, rolling her eyes.

"You could have fooled us." Dahlia, Coco, Nora, and Ren said.

"And the militia members would think otherwise." Midori and Velvet added.

"Not to mention, you're anger attracted Grimm to the town. Thankfully, the others and remaining militia managed to defeat them before they destroyed the town." Raven added with a fierce glare.

"And like usual, you-" Yang began, but Taiynag stopped her when he firmly gripped her arm.

"Don't you dare finish that sentence, young lady." Taiyang said.

"Fine." Yang grumbled while crossing her arms.

"You're in so much trouble when we get home." Taiyang said before turning to Ruby. "Ruby."

"Yes, Dad?" Ruby asked.

"Remind me to inform Glynda of what happened when we go home."

"Alright." Ruby said, internally smirking when Yang tensed up.

"Oh, no." Yang muttered. While she no longer feared her father's punishments, she still dreaded Glynda's punishments.

"Anyway. We better get going now." Taiyang said as he stood up before pulling Yang to her feet.

"Yeah. It's already four-thirty. And since most public transport is out, it will take longer to get to some stores." Dahlia said.

"Right. Thankfully, my van still works. Come on." Midori said, motioning for Jaune's friends and future wives to follow her and Dahlia out of the house. But not before they headed into the kitchen to grab the snacks Aurelia made for them.

"And we should get going as well. Davion isn't as patient as he used to be." Jaune said as he walked towards the others. But as he did, everyone noticed he had a slight limp.

"Do you want a cane or something, dear?" Aurelia asked.

"Maybe a cane since my aura is still healing me." Jaune said before wincing. "And some pain medication."

"I'll get you some." Aurelia said before exiting the room.

"Is it true that you have a vast amount of aura?" Taiyang asked.

"I wouldn't say that. But my aura reserves are above average. But the teachers wouldn't give me a specific number." Jaune answered with a shrug.

"Well, either way, it did allow you to survive a beating from my daughter." Raven said.

"YOU'RE-" Yang began, but Taiynag covered her mouth.

"You're on thin ice, Xiao Long." Taiyang warned, feeling his patience wane.

'This is going to be a long day.' Jaune thought as his mum returned with a can and some aspirin.

"Here you go, Jaune." Aurelia said as she gave him a cane and the aspirin.

"Thanks, Mum." Jaune said, shifting his weight on the cane after dry-swallowing the pill.

"No problem, dear." Aurelia said as she sat back down beside her husband.

"Anyway. Let's get going." Jaune said, turning back to the others.

"Right." Taiyang said before turning to Raven. "What will you be doing?"

"I will be scouting the perimeter of the town. While the others might have killed off the first wave of Grimm, that doesn't mean another could be lurking around the corner." Raven answered before transforming into a raven and flying out an open window.

"Could she always do that?" Jett asked, curious.

"I'm not entirely sure. And I doubt Raven knows, either. But it's something that has saved us on many occasions." Taiyang lied. While he didn't like lying to close friends, he didn't want to burden them with things they did not need to know.

"That sure is useful." Jaune said.

"It sure is. Anyway. Let's get going." Taiyang said, never loosening his grip on Yang's arm as they and Jaune exited the house.

"Now I am slightly regretting this decision." Aurelia said as the door closed.

"Do you want us to cancel Taiyang's contract for Yang?" Jett asked.

"Not yet. Let's see how it goes with the punishment Davion will give Yang. If it still seems like she might seriously hurt Jaune, we'll cancel it then."

"Alright. But what about Ruby Rose?"

"I think we can let that one go through. She seems really nice. Not only that, she seems to have a great friendship with our son."

"True."

"Although, we might need to help Jaune and Taiyang with telling Ruby what a marriage entails, considering she doesn't seem fully grasp it."

"Right. Hopefully, Taiyang also gave Ruby the 'talk.'" Jett said, with Aurelia catching the meaning as he stood up. "Anyway. We should start getting ready. And clean some of the debris."

"Right. And I should also get ready some medicine for Jaune since he might need it." Aurelia said as she got up before they left the room.

Fifteen Minutes Later

"Okay. Here we are." Jaune said as they arrived.

"This is the place?" Yang asked, confused. While she wasn't sure what she should have expected when arriving at the town's leader's place, it sure as hell wasn't a small two-floor house.

"Yup." Jaune answered. "Surprised?"

"I'm not sure. I'm honestly not sure what I should have expected. But maybe something, I don't know, bigger."

"Yeah. Davion might be miserably smug and self-righteous, but he is also frugal with his money and doesn't like to spend it freely."

"What does he do with the rest and the amount he saves?" Taiyang asked, curious.

"He puts it into the town. And anything that's left over, he puts it into the emergency budget." Jaune answered as they climbed the stairs and knocked on the door. They waited a moment before the door opened.

"Woah." Taiyang and Yang said, shocked at who opened the door. It was a woman that was easily 225 cm and was covered in muscles. And each one was about as big as Taiyang's whole head. She had red hair that was tied into three ponytails that reached her waist. She wore thick, fingerless brown gloves, green cargo pants, and a vest with pockets. And in her hands was an axe that seemed so heavy that even Nora might have trouble lifting it.

"Yes? Can I help you?" The lady asked in a deep voice.

"Yes, Theresa. We're here to meet with Davion to discuss Yang's punishment for wrecking the town." Jaune answered.

"Very well. Follow me but keep her in line." Theresa said while effortlessly lifting the axe and resting it on her shoulder before motioning them to follow her.

"Is she Davion's assistant?" Taiyang asked as he closed the door.

"No, that's Candace. Theresa is the bodyguard." Jaune answered as they followed Theresa.

"Is she a huntress?" Yang asked.

"Yes, but not officially since she never went to a combat school. Various huntsmen trained her when she was younger."

"And that's her weapon of choice?" Taiyang asked.

"Yup. I'm not sure if she named it, but it's an axe/flamethrower hybrid."

"That sounds excessive." Yang said.

"It is. Some even say it's barbaric. But no one can deny the results when all enemies are cut in half or ash." Jaune said.

"Okay. We are here." Theresa said as they arrived. "Davion is inside. The father can go in first. Afterward, the troublemaker goes in."

"Thanks, Theresa." Jaune said.

"If you require my assistance, I'll be downstairs." Theresa said before leaving.

"She seems... tense." Taiyang said.

"Well, she's got a lot on her mind." Jaune said. "Anyway. Head on in."

"Right. Yang. Wait right here." Taiyang ordered before entering.

"Fine." Yang grumbled as she sat in one of the nearby chairs.

'Okay.' Jaune thought as he sat in the chairs across from Yang. *'This is going to be a painful day. But I wonder why Taiyang asked me to come with him. He clearly still knows his way around the place and would have quickly found the place if we had given him the address. He did say he needed to talk with me about something important. Maybe he will do once we're done here.'*

"How long do you think it will be before he calls me in?" Yang suddenly asked.

"I'm not sure. It could be ten minutes or an hour."

"Have any idea what kind of punishment he will give me?"

"Since the damage easily reaches into the hundreds of thousands of lien, I would say community service."

"I doubt it's hundreds of thousands-"

"Yang. You-"

"-I'm pretty sure it's nearly a million lien. And that's not including the damage I did to other people's property. Like the boat."

"Oh." Jaune said, taken slightly aback as he was not expecting that. He honestly expected Yang to claim she didn't do any significant damage to the town. "Yeah. I don't think it's that much, but it's still a lot."

"Do you know how long I might have to do community service?" Yang nervously asked.

"I'm not sure. But judging from the damage you caused, I would say at minimum a decade." Jaune answered, causing Yang to wince.

"I figured. Oh, there goes so many things." Yang said, rubbing her face.

"Yeah." Jaune said before sighing. While he would have preferred to keep quiet, he knew he had to get some answers from Yang. "Yang."

"Yes, Jaune." Yang said, avoiding eye contact. She knew what Jaune was going to ask, and she was not ready for it or looking forward to it.

"Why did you attack me and my town?" Jaune asked.

"Before I answer that. I need to know, did any of your... other future wives attack you?"

"So far, only Coco. But that was because of shock and misunderstanding. But I feel like a few others might attack me as well." Jaune answered, remembering that he was also going to marry Weiss. "So? What's your reason."

"I honestly don't have a good reason, Jaune." Yang said, embarrassed.

"You don't have a good reason for attacking me, my family, our... friends, and my hometown." Jaune asked, raising an eyebrow while trying to keep his voice at an even level. While he could let a lot of things go, especially if it were something a close friend did, he still had his limits and drew the line at one point. And attacking his hometown and nearly injuring his family, crossed the line by a kilometer.

"Yeah. I-it's complicated."

"Then uncomplicate it, Yang."

"I can't."

"What do you mean you can't? Yang! You destroyed my hometown and nearly injured my friends and family!"

"THEY'RE MY FRIENDS TOO!" Yang growled.

"I doubt any of them will consider you a friend after this." Jaune said. *'I already know I'm going to have to run from Weiss when she learns about this. But at least she will only target me and not everyone in the vicinity like Yang.'*

"We'll see about that." Yang nervously said, trying her best to seem like she was in control.

In truth, Yang was scared she might lose her friends. While she did have other 'friends,' none could come close to replacing the ones she made at Beacon. And while Yang wouldn't admit it out loud, she was sure she wouldn't be able to find someone that could replace Jaune. While she did have male friends in the past, they were never genuine friends and were always after something, like showing off to others that they had a hot friend. That's one of the reasons why she treasured his friendship with Jaune. He was a good friend, that is, if

he still considered her a friend. But Yang wouldn't be shocked if he no longer considered her one, as even she knew she fucked up big time this time around.

"We can ask as soon as we get back. But still, you don't know why you attacked me?" Jaune asked, causing Yang to close her eyes and ball her fists. But she let out a frustrated sigh a moment later as she unclenched her fists. Yang knew she had no reason to be angry right now. And she didn't want to risk severing their relationship further if it wasn't already broken.

"It's complicated, Jaune."

"Then uncomplicate it, Yang!" Jaune said, raising his voice slightly.

"I LOST IT! OKAY! THERE! I SAID IT! YOU HAPPY?!" Yang shouted, standing up. And had the tension not been thick and his anger slowly rising, Jaune would have noticed that Yang's eyes remained their usual lilac color.

"LOST IT!?" Jaune shouted, standing up with a wince.

"YEAH! I LOST IT!"

"YANG! YOU DON'T LOSE IT!"

"WELL, I DID AFTER MY DAD TOLD ME ABOUT THE ARRANGED CONTRACT!"

"YANG! YOU'RE ONE OF THE MOST IN-CONTROL PEOPLE I KNOW! YOU DON'T JUST LOSE IT!" Jaune shouted. Yang breathed out through her nose as she clenched and unclenched her fists a few times.

"While I appreciate the compliment, that's not entirely true. I have lost it before." Yang said as she continued taking deep breaths. And once she was calm enough, she sat back down. "But that's not the only... reason behind this whole thing."

"Really? So you know why?"

"Yes."

"Can you tell me why then?"

"Not yet. As I said. It's complicated. But not for reasons you might expect, Jaune."

"Like?" Jaune asked, curious as he sat down. While he was still mildly angry, he was surprised to hear that. But he was also curious as, judging by her expression, it seemed to be a very touchy subject. And the marriage contract thing seemed to be related to it. *'Or maybe it has something to do with Raven. Those two don't seem to be on good terms. And that's putting it lightly.'*

"Sorry, Jaune. Let me put it like this. Even if this didn't happen, I don't trust you enough or feel comfortable enough to tell you. It's very personal and a touchy subject for me."

"Alight." Jaune said with a sigh. While he wanted to get an answer that was better than just 'I don't know, or it's complicated,' he knew he shouldn't push his luck since his aura was still healing him. And Jaune didn't feel like having a repeat of today's events so soon. Plus, while Jaune still debated on if he should still consider Yang a friend, he did not want to invade her personal life. But also, he enjoyed being in one piece.

"But down the road, I'll tell you everything. But that is if you would still be willing to listen."

"We'll see." Jaune said, but he doubted it. He then got comfy on his seat. Well, as comfy as he could since the tension in the air was thick. He then grabbed a magazine from the table next to him to pass the time. *'But let's see what your father has to say, Yang.'*

Twenty Minutes Later

"Okay. I'm glad we could come to this agreement." Taiyang said, relieved, as he and Davion exited the office. He was initially nervous that Davion would make him pay the whole expense for his daughter's rampage, which would be a lot. Thankfully, it wouldn't come to that.

"I feel the same way. Now. I must talk with your daughter." Davion said, glaring at Yang.

"Okay. Yang. Head on in. And behave. I don't want to hear anything from them." Taiyang warned as Yang got up.

"Yes, Dad." Yang huffed as she entered the room.

"Do you know how long it will take?"

"I'm uncertain since there is a lot we have to talk about. But I would say an hour at least and ninety minutes at most." Davion answered. "So, I suggest you head out since it can get stuffy here. I will call you or Jaune there once we are done."

"Alright." Taiyang said as Davion nodded before closing the door.

"So, how did it go?" Jaune asked, curious as he put away the magazine.

"Better than I expected, which I am extremely grateful for as I was worried we would be bankrupt by the end." Taiyang said, feeling an immense weight lift off his shoulders.

"Do you still have to pay for something?"

"Yes. But let's talk about it outside, as we still have to talk about the whole marriage thing."

"Alright. Do you want to go somewhere private or grab something to drink?"

"You're seventeen, right?" Taiyang asked, surprsing Jaune.

"Yes. I'm seventeen, about to be eighteen soon."

"Then how about we go to a bar? I could use a drink after this whole mess."

"Uh. Sure, if there is one still open. But quick question. Do you drink often?"

"No. Not really. I really only drink during big celebrations. And even then, not all the time. But I could use one today."

"Alright. I think there is still a bar that's intact." Jaune said, relieved.

"Lead the way. And then we can talk." Taiyang said.

Ten Minutes Later

"So, what do you want to talk about?" Jaune asked as they sat down.

After exiting the leader's building, Jaune took Taiyang to a nearby bar that his parents used to go to. Unfortunately, it was closed due to needing to get rid of mold growing in between the walls and replacing the lead pipes. Thankfully, there was another bar nearby that was still open. And after showing his huntsman license, they got in and ordered their drinks. Taiyang ordered a Lager while Jaune ordered a grape soda. After paying for their drinks, they headed outside to find a nice, quiet place to talk. However, most places were out of the question as they were destroyed. Fortunately, the place Jaune had taken Blake to fish yesterday was still in one piece, with a few tables and chairs nearby. Although, they did have to clear out the area of debris.

"I'm sure it's obvious by now. But it has to do with Yang." Taiyang answered before taking a sip of his beer.

"I figured." Jaune said before opening his soda and taking a sip.

"However, before I continue. I have to ask. Do you still consider Yang as a friend?"

"I'm... honestly not sure. I mean, I can let a lot of things slide, like when she pulled a prank on me that accidentally sent me to the infirmary. But it was all in good fun and not deliberate. This time was deliberate, and she nearly injured my family."

"But it wasn't the first time one of your future wives attacked you."

"Nope. And it only happened once, though."

"With which one?"

"Coco Adel. She's the one with the beret and shades."

"Oh. Okay. What did she do?"

"She broke some parts of Beacon and chased me across Vale. Oh, she also punched a hole in the wall of a motel. But aside from that, she did not damage anything else and ignored everyone else."

"So she focused only on you? And didn't harm anyone else?"

"Yup."

"Hmm. So Yang was the worst so far."

"Yes. But I also think she would remain the worst out of everyone. Some of the others might not take the whole marriage thing well, either. But they would direct their anger at me and me only. They wouldn't destroy everything in their path." Jaune said before taking another sip of his soda. "So, I don't know. I doubt we can be friends after this. Maybe we can remain acquaintances at best, but I doubt even that."

"That's understandable. Everyone has their limits on what they are willing to let slide. And Yang crossed every single line." Taiyang said

before taking a swig of his beer. *'I really wish Summer was here. I sure could use her help.'*

"Yeah. She crossed some big ones. It's sure as hell going to be awkward when we get back to Beacon."

"I can imagine. Did she say anything while you two were outside?"

"Well. I asked if she knew why she attacked me. But she said it was complicated. I then asked her to uncomplicate it. We yelled a bit, and then she said she lost it, which I don't believe."

"Did she say anything else?"

"She said there were a few other things, but they were personal. I would have gone a bit further, but I didn't feel like pushing my luck."

"Smart."

"Anyway. Before we continue, what did you and Davion say?"

"Oh. Well. Yang is going to get community service every weekend until the town is fully recovered. And she will continue it every weekend afterward for the next four years."

"Less than I expected." Jaune said, surprised. "Do you have to pay for any of the damages?"

"Yes. But thankfully, it's nowhere near as much as I initially feared."

"How much?"

"Twelve thousand lien."

"That's a lot."

"It is. Thankfully, I saved up a lot of lien from my time as an active huntsman. So I can pay for it without too much trouble. I will have to

take a few extra shifts at my work, though. But Yang's allowance will take a sharp cut because of it."

"I can imagine. Anything else?"

"Not really on my end. But we'll see when Davion finishes with Yang." Taiyang answered before taking a sip of his beer. "So, you don't consider Yang a friend right now."

"Unfortunately."

"Yang really crossed the line."

"Yup."

'This is going to be tough. Hopefully, Jaune will agree to this.' Taiyang hoped. "Listen, Jaune."

"I'm listening."

"I know this is a bit of a long shot, but I want you to give Yang another chance."

"Another chance?"

"Yes. Maybe not to become good friends, but to be on good terms. Give her a chance to redeem herself."

"I'm not sure I can. She nearly hurt my family. And that's something I cannot forgive so easily."

"But there is a chance."

"I guess. Why, though?"

"Listen, Jaune. As you probably already know. All the families have a reason for making the arranged marriage contracts."

"Yup. Although I only know a few of them. And I think one I don't entirely agree with."

"The one with Ms. Adel?"

"Yup. But that could change with some of the ones I have yet to meet."

"Possibly."

"So, what was the reason for you?"

"Well, the reason for Yang slightly coincides with Ruby. But they are a little different."

"Alright. But when did you make it?"

"Roughly a decade ago. And it was when Summer Rose, Ruby's biological mother, and Yang's stepmother, was still alive."

"So Raven is Yang's biological mother."

"Yes."

"What happened?"

"We split up for many reasons. And I married Summer soon after."

"I take it Yang and Raven don't have the best relationship, right?" Jaune asked, recalling earlier how Yang seemed willing to fight Raven.

"That's a severe understatement. Yang does not see Raven as her mother for many reasons. One of them being Raven abandoning the family a while back to go off for reasons I don't feel comfortable sharing."

"Alright." Jaune said, not happy that he was still being left in the dark. But at least this time, there was a good reason for it. "So what

was the reason?"

"Summer and I were huntsmen. We were one of the better teams out there. However, despite that, we knew we could leave this world at any moment because of how dangerous this world and our occupation are. "

"So you wanted someone to look after them if that happened?"

"At first, yes. That was the sole reason. But now, it's not the only reason."

"What do you mean?" Jaune asked, curious and confused.

"At first, it was so that in case something happened to us, there would be someone to watch over my daughters for the rest of their lives. And that reason still stands. But now another reason is there. And that's to watch over and take care of them."

"Watch over and take care of them?" Jaune asked, raising an eyebrow.

"Yes."

"Uh. No offense, Taiyang. But I'm pretty sure they could take care of themselves now. And kick anyone's ass that tries anything with them." Jaune said, remembering how effortlessly Yang and Ruby took down Grimm and many criminals.

"Oh, I know that. My little Rose and dragon can, as they say, kick all sorts of butt." Taiyang said, chuckling. While he was still disappointed with Yang for what she did, he was still proud of how far they had come. But he knew they still had a lot to learn.

"Yup. I've seen it firsthand. But if that's not what you mean, then what do you mean by taking care of them?"

"Well. Yang wasn't lying when she said she lost control."

"Wait. What?"

"You heard me, Jaune. Yang wasn't lying when she said she lost control."

"How?"

"Despite what it may seem, Yang does have anger issues. And they have led her into many situations where me, Summer, or her uncle had to bail her out."

"Wait. I thought her semblance made her angry."

"No. It doesn't. But it can seem like that. Summer and I thought the same when Yang first found her semblance. And that was because Yang's anger can cause her to activate it involuntarily. We've warned her about it before. I even tried to help her while she was still in Signal Academy and before she left for Beacon."

"But Yang still has to learn to get it under control fully." Jaune said.

"Unfortunately. And your hometown suffered because of it. So you see, Yang was telling the truth. She did lose it."

"Yeah. She did." Jaune said, now feeling slightly guilty for not believing Yang. But that did not mean he forgave her. However, Jaune was still confused about the reasoning for the marriage. "So, the reason for the marriage is that you want me to help Yang control her anger and watch out for her until then?"

"Not exactly."

"You see. Yang has a lot of trust in you, Jaune. She sees you as a good friend, although today's events might contradict that."

"Which is putting it lightly." Jaune muttered.

"And while she might not admit it out loud, Yang does see you as one of the best friends she ever made. Although, I'm not sure if she

has hidden feelings for you. But I doubt that."

"Same." Jaune said before quickly adding. "About her seeing me as more than a friend."

"Either way. She trusts you, Jaune. Yang trusts you a lot. And when Summer and I first made the contract, we knew you would take on the best aspects of your parents. And we were right. You did take on their best aspects. And it makes you the best candidate for this, more so because you two are great friends. Well, you two were friends until today."

"So, what do you want me to do? What is the reason for the marriage?" Jaune asked, now getting slightly impatient. But he also felt flattered, if that was the right word, that Yang and her parents put that must faith and trust in him. Although, that made Jaune all the more curious about what else caused Yang to lose control. He felt like it might have something to do with Raven, but he doubted that was the primary cause.

"We want you to look after her, kind of like how I did."

"Like a father?" Jaune asked, confused.

"No, not like a father. Although, I wouldn't mind having grandkids in the future." Taiyang answered, causing Jaune to blush.

"Then how do you mean?"

"Well. I want you to look after her. Yang can more than handle whatever life throws at her. But even she admitted she sometimes needs someone by her side. And now, I want you to be that person. Be there for her whenever she needs help, and I'm sure Yang will do the same for her." Taiyang said before finishing his beer. "Look, Jaune. I'm going to tell you something. Something I'm not proud of, but it also is part of the reason."

"What's that?"

"Despite what it might seem, I wasn't always the best father."

"Okay. I don't believe that. Ruby and Yang said you were the best and were always there for them." Jaune said, surprised.

"That's not entirely true. And Yang probably lied about it as she didn't want to remember it and not tell anyone else about it since it is personal. And so Ruby doesn't know about it since she was little when it happened." Taiyang explained before sighing. While he would have preferred to keep it quiet, he knew he had to tell Jaune.

"What happened?" Jaune asked, sensing Taiyang's hesitation.

"It happened a bit after we signed the contracts. Yang was about seven, and Ruby was five. Summer went out on a mission but died. It was a big blow to everyone. After that happened, I closed in and became a shell of myself. I rarely came out and drank a lot. I wasn't there for Ruby or Yang. Yang had to mature a lot faster so she could take care of Ruby and me. The whole thing lasted about three years. And every day, I wish I could go back in time and fix it. I desperately wish I could go back and fix everything. I wish I could go back and be there for them so that Yang didn't have to grow up so fast and that Ruby had a father there for her."

"We all wish we could go back in time to fix past mistakes. I know my parents do all the time." Jaune said. "But you changed. And you became the father Yang and Ruby needed, and a great one at that if their stories are true, which they probably are."

"I did change my life for them and vowed to always be there for them. And to always come to them when they need help, no matter where they are. But this also goes back to the reason." Taiyang said before sighing. "I'm not always going to be around. I've made many enemies during my time as a huntsman. And despite looking like I am still in my late twenties, I'm not going to live forever. At one point, I'm going to leave this world and reunite with Summer, whether it be because of old age or something in this dangerous world that decided I need to leave. But before that happens, I want to ensure

that my daughters have a secure future. One where they won't go through it alone and have someone watching out for them. And that's where you come in, Jaune."

"I see now. You don't want them to go alone in this life and want to ensure they have someone helping them. But you also want to ensure they have a secure future. And you want me to be that person."

"That's one way of putting it."

"It's a lot to take in what you told me. And I'm still not sure if I can forgive Yang considering she did nearly hurt my family. It's a lot you're putting on me, much more than what the others have for making the marriage contract." Jaune said, taking everything in.

It undoubtedly was a lot, much more than Jaune expected. Although, he did feel slightly honored that they chose him and that Taiyang trusted him this much. And while he would be more than willing to do it for Ruby, he was still unsure about Yang. Yet, Jaune understood where Taiyang was coming from. After all, he and his older sisters had to grow up to take care of the Twins and Clementine during the rough patch. And this world was pretty dangerous still despite the decrease in Grimm sightings. But that did not excuse Yang entirely. She still crossed a big line. Yet, despite this, he felt like he could relate to Yang on a few things, like having family problems, albeit in different ways. Moreover, before today's events happened, Jaune also considered Yang a good friend, although not as much as Ruby. However, the question remained. Could he forgive Yang for what she did today?

"But?" Taiyang asked, hoping Jaune would still go through with the contract.

"I'm still not sure. But." Jaune said, unsure if he was making a mistake.

Jaune honestly just wanted this day to be over with already. Yet, he knew he had to deal with this. Jaune honestly didn't feel like giving Yang a chance. But he also didn't want to abandon a friend, even though he doubted he could consider her one anymore. Additionally, Jaune knew that while Yang would feel the same way if the tables were reversed, she would still come to his aid if he were in trouble. Plus, she had helped him with so many things before today's events. The least he could do was give her a chance, even if he didn't want to.

"But?" Taiyang asked, feeling doubts rise.

"As much as I don't want to at the moment, I feel like I can give Yang a chance to redeem herself. And go through with the marriage contract."

"Thank you, Jaune. And I'm sure Yang will redeem herself. While it might not seem like it, she did tell me while you were sleeping that she deeply regretted everything. She just has some trouble admitting it. And I'm sure she will be glad that you're willing to give her a second chance."

"I'm not sure about that. But let's see how everything goes." Jaune said before finishing his soda.

"Yes. Let's see." Taiyang said, relieved that Jaune believed his lie about Yang admitting how guilty she felt. In reality, Yang didn't. But Taiyang knew his daughter well enough to know how she felt without her saying it. However, he still had to have a serious talk with her once they returned home. But he hopes Yang would tell Jaune how she felt before they leave.

"Is there anything else you need to talk to me about with Yang?"

"No. That's it for now. But I'm glad you're willing to give Yang another chance." Taiyang answered. *'I just hope Yang doesn't waste it. Very few would even consider giving someone another chance if they were given a billion lien. Yet, Jaune is willing to do so without any*

bribes. You really have a good friend here, Yang. Please don't let him go.'

"You're welcome. Anything else?"

"Well. Now we need to talk about your marriage contract with Ruby."

"Oh, right. But uh. Is there anything we need to talk about, considering she seems a bit too excited about it?"

"Honestly, that's more my fault. And I have no excuse for failing to fully prepare Ruby for this since I married twice. But honestly, I don't think there's anything we need to talk about Ruby since the reasons for her contract are the same as Yang's. And you two are already best friends."

"Yup. The bestest of best friends, as Ruby would put it." Jaune said, chuckling.

"Of course, my little Rose would put it like that." Taiyang chuckled. "But aside from having the 'talk' with her, I don't think there is anything serious we need to discuss."

"But that doesn't mean there are other things we can discuss." Jaune said, confusing Taiyang.

"Like?"

"Ruby and Yang liked to tease me all the time while we were at Beacon. But it would be nice to turn the tables on them and tease them for change with some embarrassing stories." Jaune said with a devious smirk.

"Oh. In that case, I have plenty of stories of them." Taiyang said, smirking.

On top of A Nearby Building

'Hmm.' Raven thought, still in her raven form, as she watched her ex-husband talk with Jaune.

While Raven wasn't thrilled that she was never told about the contracts, she had to admit Summer and Taiyang, for once, did something good in choosing Jaune as Yang's future husband. He seemed caring and respectable, albeit a bit weak and lacking in combat skills. And he seemed like he could Yang in line. However, what Raven disliked the most was how Taiyang held back on how impulsive Yang was. While it was true that Qrow, Summer, and Taiyang helped save Yang when she was in trouble, it did not include how many times she had to directly or indirectly save Yang. Raven had lost count of how many times she had to save Yang when her impulsiveness or anger put her into dangerous situations. And that was just in battles. While Yang was smart enough not to be fooled by scammers, she could still easily be goaded into something by others.

'Hopefully, this kid can prevent that from happening. And hopefully, Yang will not be so foolish to waste this opportunity.' Raven thought before flying away.

One Hour Later

"Okay. We'll be right there." Jaune said as he ended the call.

"Who was that?" Taiyang asked.

"Davion. He finished talking with Yang about her punishment. Now he just needs to speak with you to finish everything up and set up her schedule."

"Alright." Taiyang said as they got up and headed to Davion's office.

Twenty Minutes Later

'Okay. She slightly scares me.' Taiyang said as Theresa left. But he snapped back to focus when the doors opened.

"Wait here. I just need to talk with your father for a moment. And then you can all leave." Davion said as Yang exited the office.

"Alright." Yang said with a sigh as she moved to sit next to Jaune. And while he felt uneasy, he let it go.

"Come on, Taiyang. This won't take more than a few moments."

"Alright." Taiyang said as he sent Yang a warning glare before entering the office.

"So, how did it go?" Jaune hesitantly asked. Yang took a deep breath before answering.

"About as well as you might expect." Yang said.

"I can imagine. So how long?"

"Well. You were somewhat right. I would be doing community service until the town is repaired fully. And then two years afterward."

"Well. That can either be longer or shorter than a decade."

"I want to say longer. You?" Yang asked, curious.

"Considering the two nearby towns will be helping in the repairs, I would say shorter."

"Any guess on how long?"

"In total, with the two extra years you said, I will say you will be doing community service for six years."

"Well. I should thank Oum it's not in the double digits range and that I'm doing community service and not jail time."

"That's one way to look at it." Jaune said before reaching down and grabbing the drink he had brought for Yang. "Here. We got you something since we figured you might be thirsty."

"Thanks, Jaune." Yang said, grabbing the drink, taking a sip, and relishing in the flavor of her favorite drink. However, she put it down as she needed to talk with Jaune. "Jaune."

"Yes, Yang?"

"Can we talk later when we return to your house?"

"Of course." Jaune answered, already knowing what Yang wanted to talk about.

"Thanks, Jaune." Yang said before sighing. "Also, Jaune."

"Yes?"

"I'm sorry. I'm so sorry, Jaune. I'm sorry I lost it and attacked you and your hometown."

"Are you?" Jaune asked, raising an eyebrow.

"Yes, Jaune. I am so sorry for everything. I really am sorry."

"Okay."

"And I know this is a long shot. But do you think there is a chance we can remain friends?"

"Let's talk about that later." Jaune stiffly said, causing Yang to tense.

"A-alright." Yang nervously said while swallowing the lump in her throat. *'I hope Jaune still considers me a friend. But let's see.'*

"Is there any other punishment Davion gave you?" Jaune asked after a few tense moments.

"Thankfully, no. Just community service. Unfortunately, it will be during every break I get except Sundays and major holidays. Those days I will have off."

"That's good. I don't want you burning yourself out."

"Thanks, Jaune. You're a good... uh... person." Yang said, not wanting to push her luck. She knew she was on thin ice with Jaune and didn't want to ruin it permanently.

"You're welcome, Yang." Jaune said as Taiyang exited the office.

"Have a good day." Davion said before closing the doors.

"What did he say, Dad?" Yang nervously asked.

"Nothing much. He just wanted to do a quick review of your punishment, costs, and your schedule." Taiyang answered as Jaune and Yang got up.

"Do you know when I will start?"

"You will start next Saturday."

"Alright." Yang said, not looking forward to it. "Now, where?"

"We go back to my place. The others are about to arrive with the supplies. We can help my parents get ready with everything." Jaune answered. Nodding, they exited the town's leader's place and headed back to the Arc Residence.

Three Hours Later

"Now, that was a good meal." Emerald said as everyone finished their meals. And Emerald wasn't kidding or exaggerating. It was one of the best meals she had in a long while. *'I wonder if Jaune is as good of a cook as his father.'*

"It sure was." Taiyang said as he sat his plate down.

"Although it was too bad that Raven could not make it." Aurelia said as she cleaned her hands.

"Uh. Yeah. Too bad." Taiyang lied as he kept his eyes on the tree line. While Raven might not be 'present,' Taiyang could tell she was watching them in her raven form.

"But now that we finished let's set up the campfire and movie." Jett said.

"What movie are we watching?" Pyrrha asked, curious.

"There weren't many movies still available. So we got Terminator 2: Judgment Day." The Twins answered.

"Oh. That's a nice movie." Velvet said. While she would have preferred a romantic movie so she could cuddle up with Jaune, it would still do.

"And what about snacks?" Nora asked as they threw away their trash.

"Oh. We're making smores while we watch the movie." Saphron answered.

"But we also got some trail mix if you don't like smores." Dahlia said.

"Which is something absurd." Clementine commented.

"And some fresh fruit and avocado toast if you want something healthy." Midori said.

"I also made everyone some coffee and hot chocolate for everyone." Coco added.

"Oh. This is going to be AWESOME!" Ruby shouted with Zwei barking. "Do you think we can do more campfires like this when we're married, Jaune?"

"Uh. Sure." Jaune said, unsure how to feel about Ruby saying marriage so casually.

"YES!"

"Let me get the fire going." Jett said, chuckling.

"And I'll set up the Blu-Ray player and projector." Terra said.

"And in the meantime, I'll get Adrian's snacks ready. The last thing we need is him way past his bedtime." Saphron said as she got up and headed back inside the house.

"While they are getting ready. Jaune?" Yang asked, turning to him.

"Yes, Yang?" Jaune asked.

"Do you think we can talk now?"

"Sure." Jaune answered as they got up.

"Where are you two going?" Pyrrha asked, worried for her future husband.

"We just need to talk." Yang said. "Don't worry. I'm not going to hurt him."

"We'll be in one of the guest rooms if you need us." Jaune said.

"Okay. But be careful." Velvet said, with the rest of Jaune's future wives glaring at Yang. While she typically would have said something, she didn't, as Yang knew she deserved it.

Five Minutes Later

"Okay. This is a nice room, Jaune. But why are we in your room?" Yang asked as Jaune closed the door.

"'Cause our friends will most likely eavesdrop on our conversation." Jaune answered as he locked the door.

"Right. Of course, they will." Yang said before muttering. "I hope they still consider me a friend."

"Anyway. So what exactly did you want to talk about?"

"About us, what I did, the contract, and what I hope we can do going forward."

"Alright." Jaune said, moving to sit on his bed while motioning for Yang to take a seat herself.

"First off, Jaune. I want to say it again. Actually, I can't say it enough. But I will keep saying it. I really am sorry for what I did, Jaune. I have no excuse for myself, nor will I try to make one up." Yang said before sighing. "I really am sorry, Jaune."

"I know, Yang. You don't have to keep repeating yourself." Jaune said.

"I know. But I will, considering what I did. It's just... unforgivable."

"It really is, Yang. You hurt me, scared our friends, and destroyed my hometown."

"I know. And as I said, I have no excuse. I lost it, Jaune. But that's still no excuse."

"It really isn't."

"And there were a few other private things, but even then, they are still no excuse for what I did."

"And they are still personal and very touchy, so you won't tell me what they are yet."

"Sorry, Jaune. But you're right. They are very touch and personal." Yang said, unsure if she should ever tell Jaune. "But maybe down the road, I will tell you. That is if you would still be willing to listen."

"Let's see. What else do you want to talk about?" Jaune asked.

"A few things. But first things first." Yang said before sighing. "I really am sorry, Jaune. I know you forgave a lot of things we did while at Beacon. But today, I crossed a lot of lines. And I doubt you would ever forgive me. But I want to know. Is there any way I could make it up to you? Is there anything I could do that would let you forgive me or give me a second chance?"

Sighs "That's going to be tough, Yang. As you said, you crossed a lot of lines."

"I know."

"And your father and I talked a bit about this whole contract thing."

"I figured."

"Listen, Yang. What you did is just unforgivable. And I can forgive many things. But as you said, you crossed a lot of lines." Jaune said before rubbing his face. He then looked at Yang and maintained eye contact. "Honestly, I don't think I can forgive you so easily."

"Which is understandable." Yang nervously said.

"But after talking with your father and remembering what you did for me at Beacon. I still don't think I can forgive you. But I think I can give you a second chance. And by that, I mean we start over from scratch as if we never met before." Jaune said, causing Yang to let out a sigh of relief.

"Thanks, Jaune." Yang said, smiling.

"You're welcome, Yang. But please. Don't screw this up. I want you to still be my friend, but it's hard to see you like that now." Jaune said as he stood up.

"I know. But thanks, Jaune. I swear I'll make it up to you." Yang said as she moved to pull Jaune into a tight hug. At first, Jaune wanted to

pull away. But he let it go, for as he still didn't forgive Yang, he didn't want to push her away either. And it sort of felt right in a sense to be close to Yang like this.

"We'll see, Yang." Jaune said with a smile that Yang could tell was forced. And while she would have preferred it to be a genuine one, she was grateful that Jaune had given her a second chance.

"Yes. We'll see. But thanks again, Jaune. I sure am glad to have you. And if anything else, I'm glad you're the one I'm marrying in the contract."

"Again. We'll see. But you're welcome, Yang. Now let's get back to the others. They are probably starting to get worried." Jaune said with a slightly less forced smile. Nodding but also knowing it was true, Yang and Jaune exited his room and returned to the others just as Terra finished setting the projector.

"Okay. It's set." Terra said as she moved to sit next to Saphron.

"Are you okay, Jaune?" Ren asked, eyeing Yang.

"Yes. Everything is fine. We just needed to talk." Jaune answered as he and Yang sat next to each other. Although, to everyone else's relief, Taiyang sat next to Yang to ensure she wouldn't do anything. And, as Jaune expected, Velvet sat on Jaune's lap while Coco sat beside him.

"Alright." Emerald said as the movie began.

"This should be good." Ruby said as she ate her s'more while Zwei ate his snack.

'Thanks again, Jaune, for giving me a second chance. Hopefully, I can make it up to you. But I should also talk with your other future wives to see what I can do to regain their trust. It's going to be a long road, but I promise I'll make it up to you.' Yang thought as she cast a glance at Jaune. She knew she had no one to blame but herself. And

it would be hard to regain Jaune's trust. While he didn't say it, Yang knew he barely saw her as a friend. Yet, she wasn't one to give up so easily. She will regain Jaune's trust and be able to call herself his friend again. *'No matter what it takes. It will happen.'*

Notes:

This chapter was challenging to write.

And before anyone says anything, I know the destruction that Yang caused would have easily been a life sentence. But I didn't go down that path as it would mess with the story. However, that doesn't her punishments are over. More will come for her in the following chapters.

More information in the next chapter

Chapter 13

WAIT, WHAT! HOW MANY I'M MARRYING!?

Chapter 13

"Well, it hasn't aged terribly well. But it's still a great movie." Ren said as the movie finished.

"Yeah. But it's still a classic." Midori said.

"Too bad the most recent movies weren't all that great." Terra said.

"But anyway. It's time to go to sleep now." Aurelia said.

"Aw." Clementine and the Twins whined before yawning.

"That reminds me of when I had to put Ruby to sleep when we were younger or whenever I had to remind her of her bedtime." Yang whispered to Jaune. And despite the tension still being thick between them, he couldn't help but chuckle.

"That's because it's not... fair." Ruby pouted but yawned right after, causing everyone to laugh.

"Did you ever have to do that with them?" Yang asked Jaune.

"Oh, yes. Lots of times." Jaune chuckled, remembering the times he had to put the Twins and Clementine to bed. And not once had it been easy. It was always a struggle.

"Do you think our children will be like that, Jaune?" Velvet asked with a blush.

"Oh. Uh. Maybe. I *Cough* don't know." Jaune answered, blushing. However, because of this, neither of them noticed Yang tensing up.

"But you'll know when the time comes. But right now, we need to sleep. It's past midnight." Aurelia said in a tone that dared anyone to challenge her.

"Alright." Everyone said as they got up. Although, Velvet did so reluctantly.

"Let me show you the guest room, Taiyang." Jett said.

"Thanks, Jett." Taiyang said.

"Uh. Jaune. Can I talk with you for a quick second?" Yang asked, surprising Jaune.

"Sure." Jaune answered as they got up and moved to the side of the house to have some privacy. Although, they did make sure that Velvet was inside the house before speaking as they knew she would easily hear them due to her faunus traits. "What did you want to talk about?"

"It's about the whole marriage thing." Yang answered.

"What about it?"

"Well, let's just say we become friends again, and we get to where we were before this... event happened."

"Okay."

"And when we get married. Do we have to... you know... do that?" Yang nervously asked, causing Jaune to raise an eyebrow.

"Do that? Do what? What do you..." Jaune began before trailing off when he realized what Yang was referring to. And when he did, he blushed redder than Pyrrha's hair. "Oh. You mean that."

"Yeah. That. Uh. Let's say everything goes swell, we become friends again, and the marriage happens. Do we have to do that? No offense. But I don't see you-"

"None taken, Yang." Jaune said before coughing to clear his throat. "But first, Yang. Let me clarify this because I probably butchered it early. But we are friends still. We're just not great ones. Think of it as if we just became friends after years of teasing/bullying and awkwardness. We're friends, just not good ones. Okay."

'That's not great. But I'll take it over being enemies.' Yang thought, still feeling guilty. "Alright."

"But about the marriage. We don't need to do... that. It's not required."

"Oh, thank Oum." Yang said, letting out a sigh of relief. "Again. No offense, Jaune. It's not that I wouldn't do that with you. You are a nice guy, but even before today's events, I didn't see you that way. Plus, I'm not ready to go that far yet."

"Again. None taken, Yang. And that's understandable. Not many are ready for that. Honestly, I don't think I am ready for that yet."

"But you might be doing that with Pyrrha and Nora?" Yang asked, curious.

"Most likely. They are my girlfriends now. Although, it did take the contracts for me to learn that they have feelings for me and have been dropping hints for a while. And it took a date to realize my feelings for them."

"What about Velvet?"

"Not sure. But maybe down the road, as I don't see her that way yet."

"Even though she clearly sees you that way."

"Yeah." Jaune said, scratching the back of his head.

"But what about Ruby?" Yang asked through narrow eyes. Even though she might have felt guilty about what she did and knew Jaune was a good guy, her role as a big sister came first.

"Honestly, I'm not too sure, considering she doesn't seem to understand what a marriage entails. She seemed a little too excited for it and said it was great that she was marrying her best friend."

"Oh. Okay. Yeah. We all might need to have a talk with her tomorrow."

"And what about that special kind of talk?" Jaune asked, smirking.

"That falls on Dad. I am not qualified to have the conversation with her." Yang said while crossing her arms to make an X, causing the both of them to laugh. "But what about you, Jaune? Will you do that with your sisters?"

"No. Like you, my parents will do that. Them or Amber, as she's qualified to do that. And maybe Saphron as well."

"Yeah. They seem qualified. So anyway. We don't need to do that, right?"

"Nope. It can be just how it will be with Emerald, Coco, Ruby, Blake, and a few others. We might be married, but we will just be good friends."

"Alright. T-That's fine. Thanks for clearing that up, Jaune." Yang said, sighing in relief. But she still hoped they would become good friends again.

"You're welcome, Yang. Now let's head to sleep. I'm tired, and I'm sure you're also tired."

"Yeah. I could use a good rest right now." Yang agreed.

Nodding, they headed inside, with Yang heading to the guest room while Jaune headed to his room. And as much Jaune wanted to just dive into his bed, he knew he had to take a shower, remove the bandages, and take some pain medication. Sighing, Jaune grabbed his clothes and entered his bathroom to take a quick shower. After a

few moments, he exited with his pajamas and got into bed. And once Jaune did, he pulled up the blankets and closed his eyes. However, no sooner than he did, Jaune felt something moving on top of him. But to his surprise, instead of seeing Velvet, Nora, or Pyrrha, he saw Ruby and Zwei.

"Ruby! What are you doing here?" Jaune whispered.

"What? We might as well get used to sleeping in the same bed. After all, we're going to be husband and wife soon. Plus, Pyrrha, Nora, and Velvet already do it."

"Fair enough." Jaune said as his tired mind couldn't come up with a counterargument. Sighing, he got comfy while Zwei and Ruby did the same before falling asleep.

The Next Morning

Seven A.M.

'Hopefully, nothing bad happens today.' Jaune thought as he rubbed his eyes. Letting out a yawn, Jaune looked around and smiled when he noticed that Ruby was still curled up beside him with Zwei on his lap. However, Jaune then remembered something important. *'I know Yang and Taiyang are going to talk with Ruby soon about this whole marriage thing. But I should also talk with her later.'*

"Morning, Jaune." Ruby said, cutely rubbing her eyes while Zwei stretched.

"Morning, Rubes." Jaune said as he got up from his bed.

"What time is it?"

"Seven in the morning."

"Oh. I guess it's time to get up now."

"Yeah."

"And today is the last day of our vacation."

"Unfortunately." Jaune said, unsure of how to feel about his vacation. On the one hand, he was upset with how short it was and how little he could enjoy it with his friends. But on the other hand, Jaune was glad he met with another of his future wife and had Ruby learn about it.

"But we can still have fun today, Jaune."

"Of course."

"OH! MAYBE WE CAN HANG OUT TODAY, AND YOU CAN SHOW ME AROUND YOUR HOMETOWN!" Ruby shouted, slightly startling Jaune. But once he composed himself, he smiled as it would be nice to hang out with his best friend.

"Of course, Ruby. We can hang out today. Although, I am not sure how many places are still... intact after Yang's rampage. But we'll see, and we'll with what's available."

"YES! LET'S GO THEN!" Ruby shouted before jumping out of his bed. But she let out a yelp when Jaune caught her.

"Calm down, Ruby. Let's get dressed first, as I don't think you want anyone seeing you in your Grimm pajamas." Jaune said as he set her down.

"EEP!" Ruby said, blushing before dashing out of his room and to her room.

"I'm glad she's my friend. But I still need to talk with her later." Jaune sighed before turning to Zwei, who was looking up at him. "What do you say, Zwei? Want to come with us?"

"Ahhh." Zwei barked before scratching his ear with his hind leg.

"I'll take that as a yes. Come on. Let's get you some breakfast as well." Jaune said. However, before he could take a single step, he

felt Zwei pulling on his pants leg. Curious, Jaune looked down and saw Zwei pointing at his pants. For a brief moment, Jaune was confused about what Zwei was trying to tell him. But he then realized that Zwei was trying to tell him that he was also still in his pajamas. "Oh, right. Thanks, Zwei. I nearly forgot."

Receiving a friendly bark in return, Jaune chuckled and petted Zwei on his head before grabbing some clothes and heading to the bathroom to get ready. After a few moments, he came out of the bathroom and exited his room, followed by Zwei. They then headed downstairs, where they saw Midori and Saphron getting ready to cook breakfast.

"Hey. There's the future husband of eighteen girls." Saphron teased.

"Morning, Saph." Jaune said, rolling his eyes. "And I'm not sure if it is still eighteen. It might be seventeen, but we'll see."

"Oh, right. The blond that destroyed our hometown."

"Hopefully, it will remain eighteen." Midori said. "Anyway. Care to help us make breakfast? You could use the practice after all."

"Sure. Why not." Jaune answered with a shrug as he got ready. But before he put on his cooking apron that his parents got him as a gift, he gave Zwei some water to drink.

"Oh. And speaking of which." Saphron said. "Do any of your friends know how to cook?"

"Uh. I know my team knows how to cook. And I know Ruby knows how to bake. But regular food, I'm not too sure since I'm not on her team. I think Yang knows how to cook. But I can't say for Weiss or Blake."

"I think Blake can cook. Well, fish anyway since she helped us cook them when her family was here to finish the contracts." Midori said.

"What about Coco and Velvet?" Saphron asked.

"I'm not too sure about them." Jaune answered.

"Maybe you can teach them." Midori suggested.

"Maybe. Whenever we get the chance again." Jaune said as he finished gathering all the ingredients. "Now, let's get cooking."

Ninety Minutes Later

"So, what's on everyone's schedule today?" Aurelia asked as they ate their meals.

"I'm taking Taiyang to see the town. And to show Yang where she will be working next week." Jett answered.

"Terra and I will be going on a date." Saphron said while grabbing Terra's hand.

"What about Adrian?" Jaune asked.

"I was hoping one of you could take care of him. I would have dropped him off at the daycare, but it's closed."

"Sorry." Yang said, looking away.

"Oh, don't worry, Yang. It's not your fault. The daycare was closed because they found asbestos growing between the walls. So now they are cleaning it." Terra said, causing Yang to let out a breath she didn't know she was holding.

"Okay."

"Anyway. Is anyone willing?" Saphron asked.

"I can babysit him. I used to babysit some of my cousins before coming to Beacon." Velvet said.

"Thanks, Velvet." Terra said.

"What about the rest of you?" Aurelia asked.

"We're going to the movies." Clementine and the Twins answered.

"What movie?" Saphron asked, raising an eyebrow.

"Holes." Clementine answered.

"It's about a young boy who is wrongfully convicted of a crime and must either do jail time or work in a camp and chooses the latter." The Twins added.

"Alright."

"The rest of you?" Aurelia asked.

"I need to look around town and finish gathering the supplies for the wedding ceremony." Emerald answered.

"Oh, right. I forgot about that. If you want, we can start planning everything today."

"I would appreciate that." Emerald said, smiling.

"Dahlia and Midori are taking me, Nikos, Valkryie, and Ren to see the non-destroyed parts of town." Coco said.

"And what about you, son?" Jett asked.

"Me and Ruby will be hanging out today with Zwei." Jaune answered, with Ruby excitedly nodding and Zwei barking.

"Well. It seems like everyone will be busy today." Aurelia said, smiling.

"Oh. That reminds me. When will everyone have to return to Beacon?" Jett asked.

"Today is the last day of our vacation." Pyrrha answered.

"So we're supposed to be at Beacon tonight since we have classes tomorrow." Nora added.

"But unfortunately, the bullheads are not available for us." Ren said.

"While I'm out with Taiyang and his daughter, we can swing by Davion's office and see if he could ask one of the neighboring villages if they could lend a bullhead temporarily." Jett said.

"We would appreciate that, especially considering we don't want to risk having detention with Glynda." Pyrrha said.

"I can imagine." Taiyang chuckled as everyone resumed their meals.

Thirty Minutes Later

"Alright. We'll be off now." Jaune said as they finished cleaning the dishes.

"Take care, son." Jett said.

"Have fun." Aurelia said.

"But not too much fun." Saphron teased.

"We'll be back later." Jaune said, rolling his eyes as Ruby dragged him out the door with Zwei closing it.

"I still need to talk with my Rose later." Taiyang sighed.

"Me too." Yang added.

"About the marriage?" The Twins asked, curious, as they tilted their heads.

"Yeah." Yang and Taiyang answered while feeling goosebumps form on their skin from how the Twins asked their question. It eerily

reminded them of that horror movie they watched before Yang left for Beacon.

"Ruby did seem the most excited about the marriage out of all of us." Coco said.

"Maybe she has feelings for Jaune." Velvet said as she looked over the list Terra gave her on how to care for Adrian.

"I doubt that. Honestly, from what I've seen and what Ruby told me, she sees Jaune as the bestest friend she ever made." Yang said.

"Well. At least that means it won't be awkward when they get married." Midori said.

"True." Everyone agreed.

Outside Arc Residence

"Okay, future husband. Where should we go first?" Ruby asked. Jaune was about to say something but then saw Zwei peeing on some bushes. Thankfully, those were some shrubs that Jett was going to remove soon, so it didn't matter. But it did give Jaune an idea.

"Uh. Quick question. But does Zwei hang out with other dogs often?" Jaune asked.

"No. Not really. He's usually by my side. Although, I think it would be a good idea if he spent some time socializing with some other dogs."

"Then how about we go to the dog park?"

"Sure. Is there one nearby? And can we even go there?"

"Well, it's on the other side of town, so it's most likely still open to the public."

"Alright. Let's go there." Ruby said before remembering something. "But we might need to stop by a pet store to buy some bags."

"What for- Oh. Right. Sure. We'll stop by one." Jaune said, remembering that Zwei might need to make a deposit later and it would be rude not to clean it up. "Anyway. Let's get going."

"YES! LET'S GO!" Ruby shouted before jumping onto Jaune's back. And before he could say anything, Zwei somehow climbed up his body to sit on his head. Yet all Jaune could do was chuckle and start walking to the nearby pet store.

Forty Minutes Later

"Wow. This is a big dog park." Ruby said as they arrived.

"Not really. Only half of what you see is the dog park. The other half belongs to the fishing company. They use that area for the supplies before they go out into the sea." Jaune explained.

"Either way, it's still bigger than the one we have in Patch. And much nicer. What do you think, Zwei?" Ruby asked as Zwei excitedly looked around while panting.

"I think he likes it." Jaune chuckled.

"Then go enjoy it, Zwei." Ruby said as she let him go. And no sooner than she did, Zwei ran across the dog park and began rolling around, enjoying the sensation of new grass. "Aw. He likes it."

"He does." Jaune said before bringing up a bag with the things they brought from the pet store. Aside from the bags for Zwei's business, they also brought him some snacks and some toys to play with him. "Anyway. Want to rest a bit or play with Zwei now?"

"Let's go play with him now!" Ruby answered.

Chuckling, Jaune nodded and pulled out some tennis balls from the bag. He then gave one to Ruby and kept one for himself. Jaune then

let out a whistle to catch Zwei's attention, who immediately came running over. Laughing, Ruby showed Zwei the ball, causing him to bark excitedly. She then threw the ball as far as she could, with Zwei chasing after it. And once he grabbed it, he brought it back; only to drop it and forget about it when Jaune threw another ball.

"So, uh. Do you know when it's your wedding day?" Jaune asked as Zwei returned with the ball.

"February Six. And Yang's is February Eighth." Ruby answered as she threw the ball, with Zwei chasing it immediately.

"Do you have any idea about what kind of... wedding you want?"

"Not yet. But maybe a small one with just our families and maybe our close friends."

"Alright. That's fair. But what about Zwei?" Jaune asked, smirking, as he knew what Ruby would say.

"Of course, he would be there. He's the ring bearer."

"Sure." Jaune chuckled, imagining Zwei walking down the aisle with a box in his mouth containing the rings.

"Oh. That reminds me. Does your family have any wedding traditions?"

"Only one. But that does not apply to me."

"Why?" Ruby asked, curious.

"It's the Walking The Bride Down the Aisle tradition. And that's typically for females. So it doesn't apply here."

"Oh."

"What about your family?"

"I'm not entirely sure how many we have. But I know two of them."

"What are they?" Jaune asked, curious as he threw the ball again.

"The bridal bouquet and the tying the knot traditions."

"Oh. So nothing too complicated or over-the-top."

"Well, from those two, at least. I still need to ask Dad if we have any more." Ruby said as Zwei returned the ball. However, before she could toss the ball, Jaune grabbed her hand. "Yes, Jaune?"

"Hold on, Rubes. Let me head to the other side, and we can throw the ball to each with Zwei running between us."

"Alright." Ruby said.

Smiling, Jaune put away his ball before moving to stand fifteen feet away from Ruby. And once he was ready, Jaune nodded. Nodding back, Ruby threw the ball at Jaune, with Zwei chasing after it and trying to catch it in the air but failing. Once Zwei was in front of Jaune, he smiled and threw his ball to Ruby, with Zwei trying to catch it again. Although, this time, Zwei landed on his head instead of his feet. For a moment, Jaune was worried but then remembered how insanely durable Zwei was. And Zwei proved it as a second later, he was back on his feet, shaking his body before scratching his ear, all the while wearing a happy doggy smile.

'I can have the talk with Ruby later.' Jaune thought as they continued tossing the ball back and forth.

Ninety Minutes Later

"Whew. That was fun but tiring." Ruby said as she and Jaune rested on a nearby bench.

"It sure was. But it was a good idea that we buy some water." Jaune said as they took a sip of their water.

"And it was a good idea that we buy a water bowl for Zwei." Ruby said, looking at her feet and smiling as Zwei drank from his water bowl.

"But we should clean him off before we return to my place. My folks might be like pets, but that doesn't mean they want Zwei tracking dirt and mud throughout the house." Jaune said. While they were tossing the ball back and forth, Jaune accidentally threw it too hard, causing the ball to fly past Ruby and land in a mud pile. But that did not matter to Zwei as he dove into the mud without hesitation to retrieve the ball. And on his way back, Zwei ran through three piles of leaves. Needless to say, he was a dirty dog now.

"Yeah. Dad hates it when he does that too. But where should we get him clean?" Ruby asked.

"There's a groomer's place nearby. We can take him there to get clean." Jaune answered.

"But aren't they like super expensive?"

"Typically, yes. But I know the owner, and she owes me a few favors. So I can trade those in for a discount."

"Alright. We can go there then. How far is it?"

"About ten minutes away."

"Then let's go." Ruby said as they got up. But they had to dive behind the bench when Zwei decided to shake himself 'clean,' which sent mud in all directions.

"That was close." Jaune said as they stood back up.

"Yup." Ruby agreed before they left, with Zwei following them.

Fifteen Minutes Later

"Thanks again, Mina." Jaune said as they dropped off Zwei.

"You're welcome, Jaune. I should be finished with Zwei in about three hours. I'll call you when we're finished." Mina said.

"Alright." Jaune said as they exited the groomer's place.

"She seems nice." Ruby said.

"Yeah. She is nice. But she does have the mouth of a sailor."

"Mouth of a sailor? What does that mean?" Ruby asked, curious.

"Uh. That means she loves to eat seafood." Jaune quickly lied.

"Oh. Like Blake?"

"Y-yeah. Like Blake. But don't tell her that. She won't find it amusing."

"Alright. Now where?"

"How about we go play some games?"

"Sure. But do you mean at your house?"

"No. There's an arcade nearby." No further words were said as Ruby used her semblance to drag Jaune there at blinding speeds.

Five Minutes Later

"Wow. This is amazing." Ruby said as they entered the arcade.

"It is." Jaune chuckled. Even though the arcade games weren't his favorite to play, he was more than happy to play them with Ruby.

"Hands, please." An employee said.

"Why?" Ruby asked.

"It's a stamp. It's to let us back in if we need to head out." Jaune explained.

"Oh. Okay." Ruby said as she and Jaune held out their hands.

"Enjoy." The employee said after marking their hands.

"So, what game should we play first?" Ruby asked as they looked around.

"Hmm." Jaune hummed, looking around. While there were some that he recognized, the rest he had no clue what they were about. However, there was one he saw that he used to play a lot when Amber took him here. "How about Frogger?"

"Sure."

Walking over to a nearby coin machine, Jaune took out some lien, put it in the machine, and grabbed the coins it dispensed a second later. Grabbing them, they went to the Frogger machine, inserted the coins, and began playing. And despite not having played it for years, Jaune was still decent at it and managed to stay in the lead for most of the game. However, Ruby caught a lucky break near the end and managed to win.

"YES! TAKE THAT!" Ruby cheered, causing Jaune to roll his eyes.

"Yes, yes. I lost. You won. Now how about you choose the next game?" Jaune asked while rolling his eyes.

"OOH! LET'S WHO CAN GET THE HIGHER SCORE AT GALAGA!"

"No need to yell, Rubes. But okay." Jaune chuckled.

Rolling her eyes, Jaune and Ruby went over to the Galaga arcade machine and tried to outcompete each other. And as with Frogger, Ruby managed to win in the end. After they finished, Jaune and Ruby went to each arcade game that was available. However, to Ruby's delight, she won at nearly every game they played. But

unbeknownst to her, Jaune had purposely lost some of them as he enjoyed seeing Ruby so happy. Well, all games except those that require aiming, as Ruby's skill far exceeded Jaune's. Although, he did win some so as not to arouse suspicion from the reaper.

After they had beaten the last video arcade game, Ruby and Jaune decided to try some of the table arcade games, such as air hockey and foosball. However, unlike with the video games, Jaune did not hold back and went all out. But to his surprise, Ruby managed to keep up with him in nearly every game except for darts and Klask. Although, he did feel like using one's semblance during ping pong was cheating.

Two Hours Later

"Yes. And that's another win for me, Jaune." Ruby said as they finished playing basketball, with Ruby having 187 points to Jaune's 170 points.

"But I still say using your semblance is cheating." Jaune said, earning a roll of the eyes and sticking out her tongue from Ruby.

"So, what do you want to play next?" Ruby asked, looking around. While they had played nearly all the games there, there were still some they hadn't played yet.

"Actually. We can't play any more games. Mina just texted me and said they finished grooming Zwei."

"Alright. Well, it was fun. But let's trade in our tickets first." Ruby said, holding up her tickets.

Nodding, Jaune and Ruby went over to the ticket counter machine. After putting everything in, Jaune had six hundred and eighty-seven tickets, while Ruby had nine hundred and fifteen. Going over to the cashier, Ruby decided to get a Grimm plushie and a few finger toys like small skateboards. After looking through the selection, Jaune saw some decent headphones that would be perfect for working out.

However, Jaune wasn't planning on getting it for himself. He planned on giving it to Yang. While he still barely considered her a friend and only gave her a chance because her father convinced him to do so, he still thinks it would make for a nice gift, especially since Jaune knew her headphones recently broke. After they got their prizes, they exited the arcade and headed to the groomers to pick up Zwei.

Twenty Minutes Later

"ZWEI! YOU'RE SO CLEAN AND FLUFFY!" Ruby shouted as she picked up Zwei, who looked like a giant cotton ball. But a quick shake from him returned him to normal. And to this day, Jaune still has no clue how Zwei can do what he does.

"Thanks again, Mina." Jaune said as he paid for the services.

"No problem, Jaune. Take care." Mina said before heading to the backrooms.

"So where now?" Ruby asked.

"Unfortunately, most other places that come to mind are closed since it is Sunday. And the rest are under repairs because of Yang's rampage." Jaune said as he checked the time on his scroll. "And soon, we will have to return since it is getting late."

"Hopefully, our Dads can convince your town's leader to ask one of the other towns to lend a bullhead. I really don't want to have detention with Mrs. Goodwitch."

"Yeah, me neither. But Yang might have detention for a while since Taiyang will tell Glynda about it."

"So what can we do in the meantime?"

"How about we get some snacks before we go back to my place?"

"Sure." Ruby said before her face lit up. "OH! CAN WE GET SOME COOKIES!?"

"Uh." Jaune hesitated to answer as he knew he shouldn't let Ruby have too many sweets. But since they were on vacation, Jaune figured he could let her have some. And it would make the talk less awkward. "Sure. Hopefully, the bakery is still open."

"Hopefully. I could use some sweets right now, especially since Yang hasn't allowed me to have any since Monday." Ruby pouted, causing Jaune and Zwei to chuckle.

"Come on. If the bakery isn't open, I'll buy you something from a nearby restaurant." Jaune said, motioning for Ruby to follow him.

Thirty Minutes Later

"Murr hurr mphuphurrur, hurr mph phrr." Ruby mumbled with a mouth full of cookies.

"Ruby. I can't understand you." Jaune said while using his napkin to clean her face as it was covered in crumbs. Rolling her eyes, Ruby swallowed the cookies before taking a sip of her Strawberry Milk drink.

"I said these strawberry cookies are some of the best I ever had. Nowhere near the ones my mom made, but still great."

"Well, I'm glad you like them." Jaune said as he ate some Småkager cookies.

"And Zwei likes his food." Ruby said, earning a bark from Zwei before returning to his food, which consisted of Peanut Butter and Bacon Glazed Dog Treats. But as Jaune continued eating his food, he felt himself growing increasingly uncomfortable and anxious. And while he knew he could always talk to her about it at Beacon, Jaune knew it would be better if they got it out of the way now.

"Ruby."

"Yes, future husband?" Ruby asked, giggling. She still had to get used to calling her best friend that.

"Are you excited for the wedding?"

"Of course."

'It's now or never.' Jaune sighed before adjusting himself to look directly at Ruby. "Ruby."

"Yes?"

"You do know what a marriage entails, right?"

"Well. Yes. Wait, no. Yes. No. I mean, yes. But it depends on what kind of marriage."

"Okay. So you know what a marriage means, right?"

"Of course. It's where two people become... I'm not sure if united is the right word."

"In some cases, that might be the right word."

"Either way. It's when two people come together and live their lives together. And some places have the belief that marriage lasts even in death. Well, if the people don't divorce."

"Right. And it's a pretty big commitment on both parties' ends."

"Yup. Well, unless it's a marriage contract that both parties' parents made. But still, a big commitment." Ruby said before devouring another four cookies.

"A huge commitment. A life-changing one."

"In some cases."

"Still. It changes both parties' lives, regardless of how the marriage came about."

"Only to an extent." Ruby casually said.

"And it can be extremely awkward in some cases or... pretty bad in others." Jaune said, unsure of how to say the second part, so he just left it vague.

"Unfortunately. But that's not going to be our marriage."

"Of course. It's going to be a happy one. I'll make sure of it." Jaune assured.

"And I'm sure you will give the others as well."

'Still unsure about Yang. But if it works out, yes.' Jaune thought. "Of course. After all, I'm pretty sure they deserve it, especially after this contract basically uprooted their lives."

"Only if they treat it that way. Or if they were already planning something big." Ruby nonchalantly said, causing Jaune to sigh.

'Okay. Either I'm really bad at this, which is most likely the case, or Ruby is simply not getting how big this is and how potentially awkward it will get.' Jaune thought. "Ruby."

"Yes, future husband?" Ruby asked as she finished the last of her cookies.

"Ruby. I don't think you're getting how big this is and how life-changing a marriage is, let alone one that's arranged."

"Really? What am I missing, Jaune?" Ruby genuinely asked. Honestly, she didn't see the reason why Jaune was getting so worked up about it.

"Just about everything, Ruby. This is big. Very big. We're getting married in an arranged marriage."

"And?" Ruby asked, raising an eyebrow.

"And? This is big. It's going to change our lives forever. And possibly very awkward."

"Only if we make it awkward." Ruby said, catching Jaune off guard.

"What do you mean?" Jaune asked, slightly curious. But it was more to try and see how Ruby sees the marriage. And from there, Jaune could see how to proceed.

"Jaune. A standard marriage is typically between two people who love each other, right?" Ruby asked.

"Well, yeah. But that's-"

"But our isn't a standard marriage, right?"

"No. It isn't. It's an arranged one our parents made."

"Exactly. Plus, what were the original purposes of marriage?"

"Well. That varies. Most were to form alliances between families and/or kingdoms. And most of the time, it was for political or economic reasons."

"Exactly. But ours isn't like that. I know my father wouldn't do anything like that. I don't know the exact reason, but still. It wouldn't be anything like that."

'I know the reason. And it definitely isn't like that. Although, Raven seems like she might have done it for a reason like that. Thankfully, she had no part in the contract.' Jaune thought. "It definitely isn't for a reason like that."

"See. We don't need to worry about the marriage."

"But still. What about the awkwa-"

"Jaune. We're best friends. And the marriage is an arranged marriage. We don't have to act like lovers or anything that is usually associated with that. And before you ask, I'm sixteen. And the internet exists."

'Oh, right. Oh, Oum. The internet is both a blessing and a curse.' Jaune thought, recalling how the internet has helped him numerous times in the past. But he also remembered all the questionable content he saw, like that skull breaker or blackout challenge. "So-"

"So we don't need to do, act, or change anything. We're best friends, and we'll remain that way after the ceremony. We can just use the marriage as an excuse to become even better best friends."

"Of course, we'll be best friends after the marriage."

"And besides. I'm sure you plan on being friends with the others after the marriage, like with Coco, Blake, and Weiss. And it will only be awkward if we make awkward."

"Yeah. I guess you're right." Jaune said, doing his best to hide his shock.

But Jaune had to admit that Ruby did have a point. They didn't have to act like lovers or, as Yang would put it: do the deed. It was similar to how it would be with Coco, Emerald, Blake, Weiss, and some others. And one of the only differences would be that they were already good friends, whereas Jaune and the others would need to work to get to that point. Additionally, they could use this to become even better friends since it would give them an excuse to spend more time with each other.

Moreover, Ruby was also mostly right that it would only be awkward if they made it awkward. While there was a high chance it would be awkward when Jaune met his other future wives that he had never met before, it did not have to be awkward between him and his friends, especially Ruby, Pyrrha, and Nora. But as Jaune thought it over, one question did come to mind.

"How did you come to see it this way, Ruby?" Jaune asked, curious.

"Jaune. I'm not a little kid anymore. I'm sixteen." Ruby said, earning an eye roll from Jaune. "And as I said, the internet exists."

'For better or for worse.' Jaune thought.

"And one of my teachers at Signal decided to teach my class about marriages."

"Wait. What? Really?" Jaune asked, surprised.

"Yeah. She was getting married, and we were curious about the whole, so she gave us a few lessons about marriage and its history."

"Oh. Okay. But you may want to tell your father that." Jaune said, unsure of how to respond to that.

"Alright." Ruby said as Jaune felt his scroll vibrate. He took it out and saw that his parents sent him a message. "Who texted you?"

"My parents."

"What did they say?"

"They said we have to go back. The other towns agreed to temporarily lend a bullhead to take us back to Beacon. And it should be here in about two hours."

"Oh. That's good. Too bad I couldn't enjoy more time with my best friend in his hometown." Ruby said as she got up and stretched.

"Maybe when our next vacation comes around, we can do that." Jaune said as they threw out their trash and collected the stuff they had brought for Zwei.

"Hopefully. Anyway. Did they say anything else?"

"Well, my mom said she was making us something to eat and take on the trip."

"That's good. The cookies were good, but I am still a little peckish."

"Same." Jaune agreed as they headed back to the Arc Residence.

Half an Hour Later

"We're back." Jaune said as they entered his home, with Ruby closing the door, but not before Zwei dashed inside.

"How was your date?" Saphron teased.

"Not a date." Jaune said, rolling his eyes.

"Yeah. We were just hanging out." Ruby said, backing him up. "But how was everyone else's day?"

"It was fine." Velvet said as she continued playing with Adrian while Terra and Saphron watched.

"Exhausting." Ren, Pyrrha, Nora, and Dahlia answered.

"How so?" Jaune asked, curious. But instead of answering, they simply pointed to Coco and Midori.

"What did you two do?" Velvet asked.

"I took them around town to see the spots still open." Midori answered.

"But we also brought a lot of stuff for the wedding ceremony." Coco added.

"Ah." Everyone else said, understanding and feeling sorry for them.

"What about the others?" Ruby asked.

"We had a great time at the movies." Clementine answered.

"And we also went to grab a light snack." The Twins added.

"How light?" Aurelia asked with a raised eyebrow.

"Just some shaved ice." The Twins answered.

No one believed them.

"Okay. We went out to watch another movie so we could enjoy more movie snacks." Clementine said.

"We figured." Aurelia said, shaking her head.

"What about you three?" Jaune asked Taiyang, Jett, and Yang.

"A bit tiring. But fine. Although, I did have to start some of my community service by helping some militia members remove some debris from the electrical grid." Yang answered.

"For the rest of us, it was fine. We enjoyed the sights, and the town hadn't changed much since I last came here years ago." Taiyang added.

"And it was a bit... lot for me. But not unpleasant." Emerald said. And it was true. Initially, she expected it to be quick and only minor things for the wedding. Yet, Aurelia didn't allow that. She went all out for Emerald's wedding, and nearly anything she wanted, she could have.

"What did you do?" Jaune asked.

"We went over everything she needed/wanted for the wedding. She also told me a few things about herself. Although, I will tell you all later." Aurelia said, sitting next to Emerald. She was honestly not expecting to learn what she did about Emerald. While it might have been years since Aurelia was in school, she still knew how to wiggle information out of people. And because of it, she learned all she

needed to about Emerald. While she wasn't thrilled with some of it, she wasn't going to throw the poor girl on the street. However, it also meant that Aurelia would be keeping a close eye on her.

"Thanks again, Aurelia." Emerald said.

"You're welcome, dear."

"So it seems like we all had a tiring day." Velvet said as she gave Adrian back to Saphron and Terra.

"Seems like it." Jett said.

"Especially for some." Coco said, snickering when Ren, Nora, Pyrrha, and Dahlia glared at her.

"But unfortunately, our vacation is now over." Velvet said.

"Yeah. And too bad we barely got to enjoy any of it." Nora said, glaring at Yang. But before anyone could say anything, Jaune stepped in.

"That's not true, Nora. We ate together, spent some time out, enjoyed a campfire with a movie, and even enjoyed a few games. Sure, it wasn't as long as we wanted. But we only had four days, to begin with." He said.

"Right. Sorry." Nora mumbled, still glaring at Yang.

"Thanks, Jaune." Yang mouthed to Jaune, who nodded.

"Anyway." Jett said, hoping to diffuse the situation. "Davion said the bullhead should be here in a few hours to take everyone back to Beacon."

"Which means we should start getting ready." Pyrrha said.

"And I should also prepare some snacks for everyone." Aurelia said, standing up and heading to the kitchen, followed by Midori and

Dahlia.

"What about you, Emerald?" Jaune asked.

"Oh. I'm heading back. I need to talk with a friend."

"Do you have a place to stay there?"

"Technically, yes. I'm staying with my friend."

"Alright. Just stay safe and be careful."

"Will do." Emerald said, smiling. Jaune smiled back before everyone went to gather their stuff and get ready.

Two Hours Later

"Take care, bro." Saphron said as she held Jaune in another headlock while everyone else laughed.

"You too, Saph." Jaune said as he finally escaped the headlock.

"Will we see you and your friends again soon, dear?" Aurelia asked while eyeing Yang, who was talking with her Dad.

"I'm not too sure. But probably around Christmas or when the Vytal Festival comes."

"And hopefully, it will be under better circumstances." Terra said.

"And longer since we only had four days to spend together this time. And not all of it was with you or your future wives." Midori added.

"Hopefully. But still. Midori, please keep some medical supplies on hand as I don't know how the others would react to the marriage contract." Jaune said.

"Will do."

"Anyway. It was nice meeting you, Aurelia and Jett." Pyrrha said, with Nora, Coco, Velvet, Ruby, Yang, and Ren agreeing. Emerald would have also agreed, but she had already left.

"It was nice meeting all of you." Jett said, smiling.

"Please take care of my son." Aurelia said with a warning tone.

"We will." Nora and Velvet said while grabbing Jaune's arms.

"We will take good care of him." Coco said with a smirk before winking at Jaune, causing him to blush.

"Oh. She's definitely a keeper." Saphron said, causing Jaune to roll his eyes.

"It was nice to see some old friends again." Taiyang said, shaking hands with Jett and Aurelia.

"Same, Tai. It was good to see you." Jett said.

"Same here. Although, I do wish it was under different circumstances." Aurelia said.

"I wish the same. Still, it was nice seeing you two again." Taiyang said.

"Will you be going to Patch as soon you land at Beacon?"

"Well, yes. But first, I'll have to talk to Glynda and Ozpin."

"Oh, right. Anyway. Take care, everyone. And we hope to see everyone soon." Jett said.

"See you, guys." Jaune said as everyone got on the bullhead, with it taking off a few moments later.

"What do you think about Jaune's future wives?" The Twins asked their parents.

"Well. Most of them we like." Jett said.

"Although, some of them seem like they might be a bit much for Jaune, especially that hammer wielder and blonde brawler." Aurelia said.

"Hopefully, Jaune and her can make amends." Clementine said.

"Hopefully." Dahlia said.

"But I still like that fashionista." Saphron said, smirking.

"Oh, please. You're only saying that because she also likes to tease Jaune. And with her by your side, you'll be able to find new ways to tease him relentlessly." Midori said.

"Maybe." Saphron said with a smile that told everyone it was true.

"I feel sorry for the Twins and Clementine when they get old enough and enter a relationship." Dahlia said.

"Oh, don't could yourself and Midori out yet. Jaune wasn't lying when he said it was the duty of the older sister to tease the younger siblings. And you two are my younger siblings." Saphron said with a devious smirk.

"Joy. We're not looking forward to it." Dahlia and Midori said.

"Come on, everyone. Let's head back home. It's late, and we could use some sleep." Aurelia said as the Twins and Clementine yawned.

"Alright." The others said before heading home.

Meanwhile

On the Bullhead

"How long do you think until your hometown is repaired, Jaune?" Ruby asked as she played with Zwei.

"As I told Yang, maybe in less than a year. And with her help, it should be around eight months before everything is back to normal." Jaune answered.

"Oh, that's good."

"Yeah."

"Although we could have done without the-" Pyrrha began, but Jaune cut her off.

"Does anyone have any plans for when we return to Beacon?" Jaune asked. While he still hadn't forgiven Yang, that does not mean he liked seeing or hearing anyone bringing it up again and trying to guilt trip her. She had already apologized. And that was enough for Jaune to feel like Yang didn't deserve to be guilt-tripped. Forgiveness was still a while away, though.

"No. Not really." Pyrrha, Nora, and Ren answered.

"Same." Velvet answered but tensed when Coco placed her hand on her shoulders.

"Don't be so sure about that, Bun-Bun. We still need to go over some of the details of our weddings." Coco said with a smirk.

"What about you, Ruby?" Jaune asked.

"Not much. It'll most likely be the same as usual. But I might talk with my Dad later on to find out more about the wedding." Ruby answered. "What about you?"

"Most likely, get ready to meet my other future wives."

"I'm still surprised this is even legal." Ren said.

"You'd be surprised at what is legal. But so were the rest of us when we realized multiple parents made arranged marriage contracts with the Arc Family." Taiyang chuckled.

"I have to ask. Did anyone of you check to see if this was okay?" Coco asked.

"Not at first. But once we learned about it, we looked up the local laws and even called some professionals to see if there was a law about this somewhere. But to our surprise, there wasn't one."

"And now all of us can marry Jaune." Ruby said, causing everyone to chuckle.

"But while we are on that topic. Do you know who else you're marrying, Jaune? I know it's Pyrrha, Nora, Ruby, Blake, Coco, Velevt, and me. But that still leaves eleven others." Yang asked.

"Oh. I don't recall all their names. But from the top of my head, I know it's May, Arslan, Neo, the Malachite Twins-"

"Wait. You're marrying them?!" Yang asked, shocked.

"I'm just as surprised as you are, Yang. But will that cause any problems?"

"As much as I don't like those three, I won't cause any trouble. After all, if this works out, they will be my... wait. What would we even call each other?"

"What do you mean?" Velvet asked, curious.

"In-laws mean relatives by marriage. And a stepfamily is a family where at least one parent has children who are not biologically related to their spouse. But what would we call each other? I mean. We're not related by blood or anything like that, but we will be marrying the same person." Yang answered, surprising everyone as they had thought about that.

"I'm not too sure. But to be honest, I hadn't thought about that. However, I would say we would be step-wives or something like that." Coco answered after giving it some thought.

"Anyway. I won't cause them any trouble, Jaune. But if they do, I will step in." Yang said, turning back to Jaune.

"That's fair. Anyway. The only one else that comes to mind is Weiss and her sister, Winter." Jaune said.

"Oh. Yeah. Weiss might not take too kindly to it. Do you want me to hold her back while you try to calm her down?"

"If she reacts like how I think she will, yes. That way, we don't cause any damage to our surroundings. But if she remains 'calm,' per se, then no."

"Alright. But what about Weiss's sister?"

"I don't know how she will react since I never met nor know anything about her. But if what Ren said is true and that she is a specialist at Atlas, then she might be calm about it but not thrilled."

"Well. Hopefully, that's the case." Yang said, leaning back in her seat.

"Hopefully."

A Few Hours Later

Beacon Academy

"Well. Vacation is over. Back to our normal lives now." Pyrrha said as they got off the bullhead.

"When have our lives ever been normal, Pyrrha?" Nora asked, causing Pyrrha to roll her eyes.

"Yeah. I wouldn't say normal. Maybe less chaotic." Coco added.

"But before that happens. Yang. Can you show me to Glynda's office? We still need to talk with her."

"Of course." Yang answered after swallowing the lump in her throat. However, before they could leave, they heard Jaune's scroll ring.

"Who's calling, Jaune?" Velvet asked, moving to stand next to Jaune.

"Not sure. It's an unknown number." Jaune answered after taking out his scroll.

"Just ignore it." Coco said.

"Yeah. It's probably a scam caller." Ren added.

"But what if it's one of his future wives that somehow got his number?" Nora asked.

"Still. I don't think he should-" Yang began but stopped when they heard Jaune's scroll's AI voice speak.

"This is an important call. Automatic answer will happen in 3... 2... 1..."

"THAT'S A NEW FEATURE!" Everyone said, shocked as Jaune desperately tried to decline the call but to no avail.

"Answering."

"Um. Hello?" Jaune hesitantly asked.

'Yes. Hello. Is this Jaune Arc?' The caller asked.

"Yes. This is Jaune Arc. But uh. Who is this?"

'Forgive me. I should have introduced myself first. I am a specialist of the Atlas Kingdom. My name is Winter Schnee. And I am one of your future wives through the contract our parents made a decade ago. And I am also the elder sister of your classmate, Weiss Schnee. We need to talk. Is this a good time?'

'This is not going to end well.' Jaune thought as he felt a chill go down his spine.

Notes:

Well, that was a semi-nice break. But back to it.

The Next Chapter will have either Winter's and Wiess's. (Still undecided.) And the following chapter will be the other's.

Also, I planned on uploading these chapters yesterday, but something happened with Word and Fanfiction. As such, I had to convert the chapters before Fanfiction would accept them. And because of them, some things might seem slightly strange or out of place. If that happens, tell me, and I'll reupload it again.